

105
1st Quarter

The Bible Study Union Lessons

THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY

MAY 27 1918

INTERMEDIATE GRADE
FIRST QUARTER

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
597-599 FIFTH AVENUE

NEW YORK

MANUAL WORK MATERIAL

BY a special arrangement with the New York Sunday School Commission, Inc., 416 Lafayette Street, New York, all orders for manual work material will be filled by them. This includes note book covers, punched paper, pictures (singly and in sets), maps, decorative borders, cutting and tearing paper, crayons, etc., as mentioned in the lessons. Send all orders for this material directly to the Commission, mentioning that it is for use with the Bible Study Union (Blakeslee) Lessons.

Charles Scribner's Sons
RELIGIOUS LITERATURE DEPARTMENT

PALESTINE

THE TIME OF CHRIST

HISTORICAL MAP NO. 21

BY RICHARD MORSE HODGE

COPYRIGHT 1908

BY WILLIAM BEVERLEY MARSH

NEW YORK

■ GRASS & FRUIT
■ AGRICULTURE
□ DESERT

MEDITERRANEAN SEA



DIRECTIONS.—The outline type is to be filled in with ink to make solid letters, figures and boundary lines. Land areas are to be colored with crayon according to the different shadings on the map. The special crayons prepared for this series of maps are preferable to water-colors, which blur the lettering unless waterproof inks are used.

FIRST.—With red ink fill in the following:—The double lines marking the political boundaries. The words "Governed by Pontius Pilate," "Governed by Herod Antipas," "Governed by Herod Philip," "Independent Greek Cities." The small circles without names which mark the sites of the twelve known independent Greek cities of the Decapolis (these will be found scattered over the center and right-hand part of the map from Syria down).

SECOND.—With black ink fill in all of the balance of the lettering and figures in the map and border, the circles marking the towns to which names are attached and the first two lines of the title of the map.

THIRD.—Outline the coasts of the two seas and six lakes (four of them in the northeast part of the map being marshy as indicated by inlets passing the shore line) by marking a narrow border of blue about $\frac{1}{8}$ -inch on the water side of the shore line.

FOURTH.—The cultivable lands are shown by heavy shading. Color with chrome green.

FIFTH.—Sandy deserts are shown by light shading. Color with gold ochre.

SIXTH.—The land areas not shaded are grassy hill color with brown (burnt umber).

THE BIBLE STUDY UNION LESSONS
THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

BY
WILLIAM BYRON FORBUSH

Author of "The Boy Problem," "The Boys' Life of Christ,"
and "The Coming Generation"

CHARLES F. KENT, PH.D.
GEORGE A. COE, PH.D., LL.D. } *Consulting Editors*

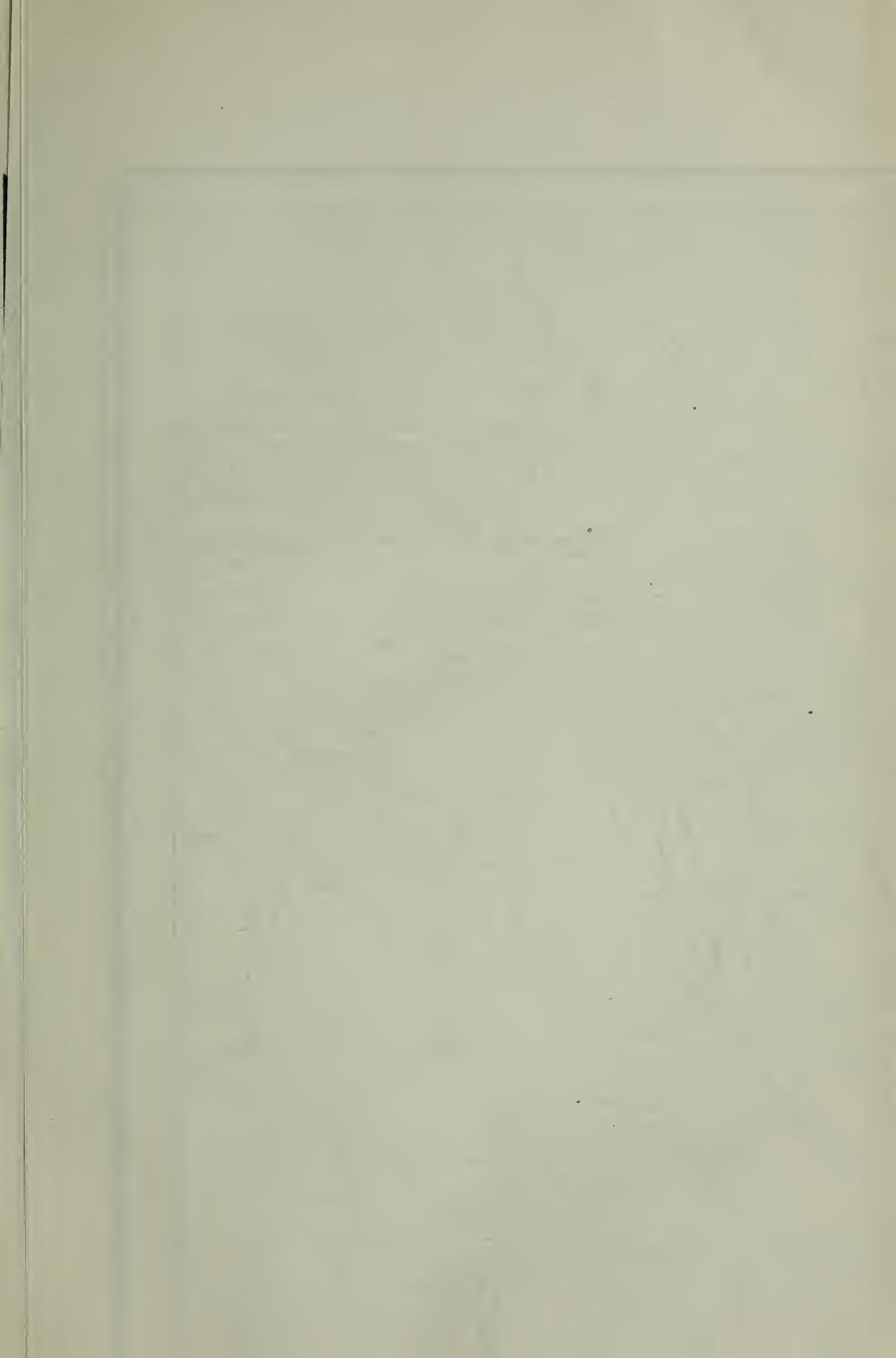
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
NEW YORK

TABLE OF CONTENTS

		Pages
Chapter	1. A Boy of the Hills	1
Chapter	2. Jesus' World	8
Chapter	3. Jesus' Schooling	15
Chapter	4. A Country Boy's First Visit to the City	23
Chapter	5. The Village Carpenter	34
Chapter	6. The Man who Had a New Message	40
Chapter	7. Jesus' Choice of a Calling	48
Chapter	8. How Jesus Went about His Work	57
Chapter	9. His Early Comrades	65
Chapter	10. How Jesus Lived in His New Home	72
Chapter	11. The Men who Told us about Jesus	81
Chapter	12. The Pharisees Studying Jesus	88

The Bible Study Union Lessons (Completely Graded Series) Intermediate Grade:—Published quarterly by Charles Scribner's Sons, 597-599 Fifth Avenue, New York; price, 12 cents each, 48 cents a year.

Copyright, 1912, by Charles Scribner's Sons, New York.



232,901

F747L TO THE PUPIL.

V.1

DOES JESUS SEEM REAL?

Have you found it hard to make the life of Jesus seem real? Do you sometimes feel as if He had not lived upon this earth at all? Do you conceive of the Holy Land as being as definite a place as the State in which you live? Do you really know anything about the circumstances under which He was born and brought up, as you do of those of our national heroes, Washington and Lincoln? It is to be our endeavor this year to get a knowledge of Jesus which shall make His life and character seem as vivid as we possibly can.

THE CONTENTS OF THIS COURSE.

The first glimpse which the Bible gives us of Jesus in the conscious life of boyhood is at an age very near your own, in His thirteenth year, an age which, in a country where boys mature more rapidly than in our own, would make Him about the equal in intelligence and experience of a boy or girl of fifteen in America. We shall, therefore, begin at that period and continue, emphasizing constantly what Jesus did rather than His teachings, and filling whatever gaps we can where the Scripture material is meagre by what the scholarship of our time has learned as to the history, thought and customs of His time.

THE METHOD OF STUDY.

The method of study is this. You are expected, during the previous week at home, to endeavor to read together the Bible passages and the lesson story which explains them, and to try to put the knowledge which you thus gain in form so that you can tell it by answering the lesson questions that follow. Your teacher will also give you one definite personal task, not given to any one else, which may be in the way of furnishing some simple map work or a report upon a fact or topic for discussion.

The handbook is furnished, as you see, with an unusually rich variety of maps, charts and illustrations. The uses of these will be explained by the teacher. Each one taken alone helps to give vividness to your knowledge of the Master. All together they help build up a complete idea of His life such as you have hitherto been unable to receive.

The work suggested for you to do is not difficult, does not demand much time and is very interesting. For the success of your teacher's efforts and of the work of your class, it is hoped that you may be depended upon to do your share.

JESUS AND OUR LIFE PROBLEMS.

The special aspect of Jesus which is presented in these lessons is as the Master of Life, appealing to the sympathy and loyalty of young people, and ready to help you solve the problems of your youth. The lessons for three months, printed in the handbook for the last quarter, deal especially with the problems which young people of high school age must face, and interpret them in the spirit of Jesus. These problem-lessons will be taken in full in schools that hold sessions during the summer, but it is hoped that you will find opportunity to think over and discuss some of them, in some of the winter sessions of the class even if you adjourn in the summer.

822055

LIST OF LESSONS.

(Subject to revision.)

- I. A BOY OF THE HILLS.
- II. JESUS' WORLD.
- III. JESUS' SCHOOLING.
- IV. A COUNTRY BOY'S FIRST VISIT TO THE CITY.
- V. THE VILLAGE CARPENTER.
- VI. THE MAN WHO HAD A NEW MESSAGE.
- VII. JESUS' CHOICE OF A CALLING.
- VIII. HOW JESUS WENT ABOUT HIS WORK.
- IX. HIS EARLY COMRADES.
- X. HOW JESUS LIVED IN HIS NEW HOME.
- XI. THE MEN WHO TOLD US ABOUT JESUS.
- XII. THE PHARISEES STUDY JESUS.

- XIII. WHAT JESUS' TEACHING WAS LIKE.
- XIV. JESUS' MESSAGE TO HIS NEIGHBORS.
- XV. JESUS' PROCLAMATION OF THE KINGDOM.
- XVI. A NIGHT AND DAY OF PERIL.
- XVII. BACK TO HIS OLD HOME.
- XVIII. THE ADVENTURES OF HIS TWELVE MESSENGERS.
- XIX. THOSE WHO WERE WITH AND AGAINST JESUS.
- XX. THE MARTYRDOM OF A HERO.
- XXI. JESUS SHARING WITH THE MULTITUDE.
- XXII. THE BREAK WITH THE PHARISEES.
- XXIII. JESUS AMONG A FOREIGN PEOPLE.
- XXIV. THE SOURCE OF JESUS' COURAGE.

- XXV. JESUS TAKING THE HARDER ROAD.
- XXVI. A PRELIMINARY VISIT TO JERUSALEM.
- XXVII. IN PEREA AND SAMARIA.
- XXVIII. GOING UP TO JERUSALEM.
- XXIX. JESUS' ARRIVAL AT JERUSALEM.
- XXX. JESUS' ATTACK UPON THE CORRUPT PRIESTS.
- XXXI. THE CONSPIRACY AGAINST JESUS.
- XXXII. JESUS' ATTITUDE IN THE FACE OF DEATH.
- XXXIII. BETRAYED, DENIED, CONDEMNED.
- XXXIV. THE DEATH OF JESUS.
- XXXV. THE CHRIST WHO ABIDES.
- XXXVI. THE RADIANCE OF THE MASTER.

YOUNG PEOPLE'S PROBLEMS

AS INTERPRETED BY JESUS.

- XXXVII. WHAT IS THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION?
- XXXVIII. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A DISCIPLE OF JESUS?
- XXXIX. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A CHURCH MEMBER?
- XL. THE SPECIAL PLACE OF YOUNG PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH.
- XLI. ONE'S CALLING.
- XLII. THE FIELDS OF CHRISTIAN SERVICE.
- XLIII. THE CHRISTIAN IDEAL OF A HOME.
- XLIV. THE PROBLEM OF GETTING READY FOR LIFE.
- XLV. FOLLOWING JESUS IN OUR WORK, SCHOOL AND PLAY.
- XLVI. THE INNER LIFE.
- XLVII. THE PROBLEM OF SORROWS AND DISAPPOINTMENTS.
- XLVIII. A LIFE OF SERVICE.

CHAPTER I.

A BOY OF THE HILLS.

The boy Himself: Luke 2: 40.

His home: John 1: 45, 46.

The character of Mary: Luke 1: 28-30, 48, 52, 53; 2: 19.

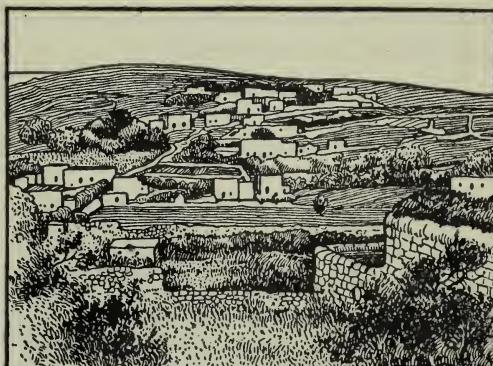
The character of Joseph: Luke 11: 5-9.

His brothers and sisters: Matt. 13: 54-56.

THE PLACE WHERE HE LIVED.

If you were to take a three weeks' journey across the Atlantic, past Gibraltar and through the Mediterranean to its eastern or furthest shore, you would touch what we call "the Holy Land," Palestine, the land of the Bible. You could land on the shore of its northern or narrow part at the port of Haifa, the Acre of the Crusaders. Should you continue your journey on horseback across a great and fertile valley you would find hidden away on the slope of the long range of foothills to the north, a town of about seven thousand persons. That was the town of Nazareth, where Jesus lived. The Bible tells us so little about this village that we must depend upon scholars of our own time who have visited it and who are able to tell us how it looked in the time of Jesus.

"In the distance it is seen 'clinging like a whitewashed wasp's nest to the hillside.' It is reached from the plain below by a crooked path, so steep and narrow that every traveler has a bad word for it. The village lies in and reaches a little upwards from a hollow. Clustering hills rise to 1,600 feet behind. There is but little pasturage upon them. In the spring season wild flowers grow—mignonette, larkspur, anemones and roses—and in the cultivated gardens of the village are clumps of olive-trees and palms. But at other times there is



From a photograph.

NAZARETH.

View from the so-called carpenter's shop of Joseph. This view of the beautiful hills south of the city was doubtless very familiar to Jesus.

only barren rock."—J. Brough,—*The Early Life of our Lord*.

We shall learn more later about the land in which Nazareth was situated. It is enough now to say that the whole country which was Jesus' world, was no larger than Vermont. This little secluded town had about the same relation to the great capital, Jerusalem, at the south, as a little Scottish town has to London, or a Vermont village to the city of Boston. The country just below Nazareth, however, was not barren, as much of Scotland is, but it was so beautiful and fertile that there was a common saying then, that "it was easier to rear a forest of olive trees in this region, than one child in Judea." The workingmen of Nazareth itself were mostly vine-dressers, for the hillside soil was less fertile, being stony. Farmers in those days objected to the loneliness of the country and lived in the villages, walking out to their fields. There were a few shepherds, however, staying on the upland pastures. There were also smaller hamlets around, from which probably the inhabitants came in to Nazareth on market days. Fish and fishermen, being twenty miles away, were seldom seen.

The main highway from Damascus to Egypt could be dimly seen from the hilltop above Nazareth, but the path which led through the village from the north was simply the outlet from the plateau villages toward the south. Except for a few traders, cattle merchants and foreignized Jews, there were few strangers' faces seen in Nazareth.

THE HOUSE WHERE JESUS LIVED.

In order to see the kind of home Jesus had as a boy, let us turn to the author whom we have just quoted.



OUTSIDE STAIRS TO THE ROOF.

"The houses in Eastern villages are, and were, of the simplest construction. That in which Joseph and Mary lived would be very small; it was only the well-to-do who had large ones, or had them built of brick or stone. The dwellings of the poor were mere square huts of clay, dried hard in the sun and whitewashed.

“Stairs on the outside led up to the roof, which was flat, and was used almost as much as the ground floor. Here lay drying in the sun vegetables and fruit for winter consumption. It was a promenade also, where the inhabitants enjoyed a fresher air than in the stuffy streets, or watched the flocks and herds pasturing in the plain; and in summer it was often a sleeping place.

“There was only one room below—this was the whole house of the poor—one room for kitchen, living-room, bedroom, tool-house, everything.

“It had no windows; what light there was, came through the open doorway, and in some houses from a hole in the centre of the roof, which served as chimney.

THE FURNITURE.

“There was very little furniture.

“The bedding of the family consisted of a few carpets, rolled up and put in a corner during the day, or, in the summer, packed away in a big box, to keep them from insects. Some houses had a wooden couch, but this was a luxury.

“There were no chairs; a few mats and cushions served the purpose.

“The father’s bench and tools were here also, when he was not using them outside; and it was troublesome in winter to keep the iron from rusting, for there was not much protection against damp air in an open clay hut whose floor was the bare ground.

“Some earthenware jars and pots held all that was wanted for cooking.

THE HEATING AND LIGHTING.

“In cold weather a charcoal fire was kindled in a pan of earthenware, narrow at the bottom and spreading to eighteen inches in diameter at the top; but better houses had a brazier or stand of brass or copper, two feet high, with a chafing-dish in the upper surface to hold the fire.

“There was not much need for artificial light; it was bedtime when it was dark. Still, each house had a lamp and a stand to set it on. The lamp was of earthenware, in the shape of a rather deep saucer, with a lip, like that of a cream-jug, to hold the wick. It stood sometimes on a high ledge in the wall, but usually on the floor, and therefore, its stand had to be a high one, so that it might, as Jesus said, ‘give light to all that are in the house.’

An earthen jar held the oil with which to replenish it when the light grew dim.

“The measure (or ‘bushel’ as our A. V. has it) stood ready to hand. It was useful in all sorts of ways. Things were put into it, as into a drawer or bag; it was turned upside down and the lamp set upon it; now it made a convenient little table, and now it was a plate.

“There was also a besom with which the housewife might sweep the floor, as did the woman in the parable who had lost a piece of silver.

“Lastly, in the doorway, hung the Mesusah, a little oblong box containing a roll of parchment on which were written in twenty-two lines two passages of the Law.

THE FAMILY AT MEALS.

“We may imagine Jesus sitting with the other members of the family on the floor around a stool, on which was placed a dish containing the relish, whatever it might be—perhaps curds or sour wine or wheat porridge, or more rarely a stew of meat—and dipping His thin cake or bread into it to eat.

“Such was the humble home to which the parents of Jesus brought Him when still an infant, and in which He lived and learned during those thirty years of quiet preparation for the great work that He was destined to do.”

HOW A BOY WAS OCCUPIED.

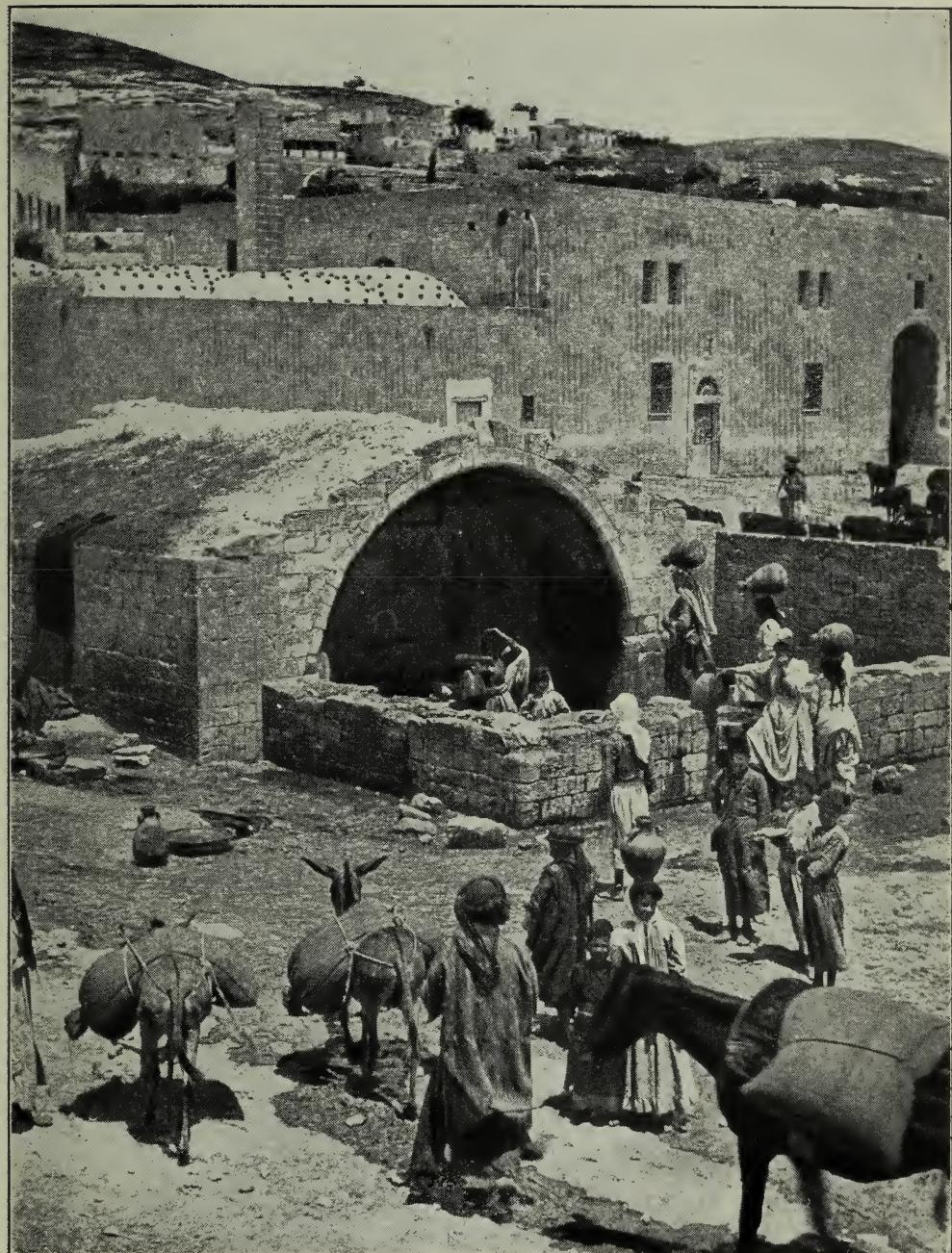


Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot
JESUS HELPING HIS MOTHER.

It is not known whether Jesus ever went to school, but we will discuss this in a later chapter. No doubt He helped His father at his work as a carpenter, and went each morning with His mother to the one well in the village, at the foot of the hill, which was the common meeting-place, to carry a water-jar for her up to His home.

THE PARENTS OF JESUS.

Motherhood was the best thing in Israel. “God could not be everywhere,” was one of the Hebrew sayings, “and so He made mothers.”



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

ANCIENT "FOUNTAIN OF THE VIRGIN" WHERE MARY CAME FOR
WATER FOR HER HOUSEHOLD—NAZARETH.

The Jews gave women a nobler place than did any other people. They recognized their mothers as the chief blessing of both present and future national life. Every account that has come down to us of the mother of Jesus represents her as one devoted to the best religious ideals of her people, and as eager to give her son the very best she had. The village rabbi would teach Jesus of the past, but a mother lives in the future, and it would be she who would inspire her son to hope and to attain. A woman has no weapon for victory over wrong except her children. Through her son Mary might hope to help bring in the longings of her race.

Fathers among the Jews were held responsible for the education and conduct of their children, and were punished in their stead if they were guilty of bad conduct when they were small. Of Joseph we know nothing directly. The adjective "just" or perhaps better, fair, which is applied to him in Matthew and in the early legends, suggests a quality which a son appreciates more than any other in a father. As "The Bible for Learners" says, "Since Jesus speaks of a father's love as a reflection of the love of God, since He could find no higher nor more glorious name Himself than that of father, we may safely conclude that Joseph was a faithful, careful and affectionate parent—in a word, all that father ought to be." Please read the story in Luke 11: 5-9, and see if it does not seem to you as if this touching little incident about the father in bed with his children, getting up to help a poor neighbor, must have been a recollection which Jesus had of His own boyhood and of His own generous parent.

We know also that Jesus had four brothers and at least two sisters. There was, then, a family of nine persons, with all that means of crowding, economy, sharing of labor, of trouble and of happiness.

SUMMARY.

Put all this which we have been saying together into one picture and realize the kind of life which this boy of your own age lived twenty centuries ago, in a beautiful, secluded village, in a poor and simple home, with unlearned but earnest parents, and with few privileges of school. These, as we shall see later, were not all the elements of Jesus' boyhood, but they were those of His own immediate home life.

QUESTIONS.

These questions are intended to help the pupil put the impressions which he has gathered from the preceding scripture material and lesson story into

such definite form that he can set them in words. It is not necessary to write the answers in full, but it may assist memory if headings as reminders are jotted down in the spaces below. It is hoped that all the members of the class will answer these questions.

Give three facts about the highland village of Nazareth.

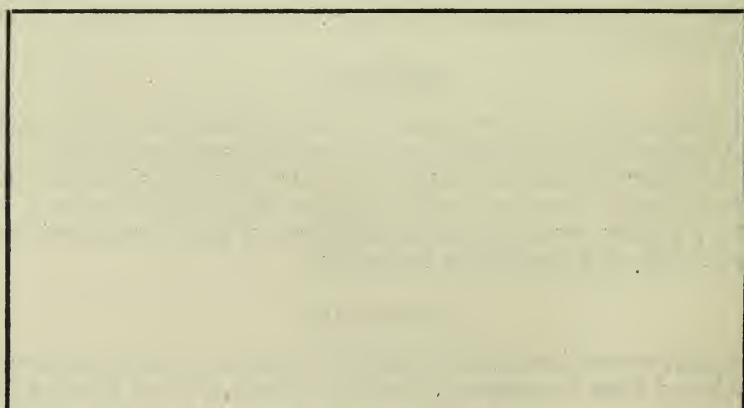
What are the occupations of its inhabitants?

What did the people in the neighborhood do?

What relation did Nazareth have to Jerusalem?

What use was made of the roof of Joseph's house?

Let the oblong below stand for the interior room. Locate and mark the various articles of furniture as you think they were placed.



In what manner, do you think from the illustration, was water carried in those days?

What can you say about the mother of Jesus?

Just what share did fathers in Jesus' time have in the training of their sons?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

One of the following will be assigned to a pupil by the teacher, for report at the beginning of next week's lesson period. It is most desirable that all be faithfully prepared, for the work of next week largely depends upon the material thus prepared and presented by the students. The report is to be made by headings jotted down in the spaces below.

How much money and time are required to-day for a visit to the boyhood home of Jesus? (This may be answered by securing a travel circular from a tourist agency or by conversation with the pastor or some traveler.)

Name some modern articles of furniture which were not found in Jesus' home.

What do you think would be some of the wholesome influences of a village like Nazareth?

Name two helpful influences which would be missed in Nazareth.

Find in your school history or in an encyclopedia, under the title "Augustus Cæsar" or "Rome," one or two interesting facts about the social conditions in Rome in the Augustan age.

WORK FOR ALL.

Fill out the contour map to show the various altitudes of the Holy Land. (This is map numbered 4, and the method and material for doing this work will be furnished by the teacher. It is hoped that this interesting work will be done by all the pupils.)

CHAPTER II. JESUS' WORLD.

The conditions of His age: Romans 1: 28-32.

The expectations of foreigners: Matt. 2: 1, 2.

The Jewish expectations: Luke 1: 71-75; Luke 2: 25-38; Luke 2: 10, 11.

The expectations of Jesus' parents: Matt. 1: 21; Luke 1: 46-55.

"He hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

He hath put down princes from their thrones,

And hath exalted them of low degree;

That he might remember mercy

(As he spake unto our fathers)." Luke 1: 51, 52, 54.

"Hallowed . . . with vow sincere
To serve the time's all-pressing need,
And rear, its heaving seas above,
Strongholds of freedom, folds of love."

—Samuel Johnson.

THE ROMAN WORLD.

Would Washington have been the same kind of man if he had been born in the circumstances of Lincoln? What would Queen Elizabeth have been if she had lived in the time of the Crusades? Would you yourself not have looked at life differently if you were a Greek boy of the day of Pericles, or lived as a French girl in the Gaul that Cæsar was conquering?

What was the world in which Jesus was brought up?

It was, as you know, a Roman world. Jesus lived in the great Augustan age. Indeed, Augustus himself, the successor

of Julius Cæsar, was ruler of the world when Jesus was born, and lived until Jesus was seventeen years old. Some of you have learned from your school histories what the Roman Empire was at that time. The city of Rome was becoming a splendid capital, which, in a few years, Augustus rebuilt in marble. It had many modern institutions and comforts. There were public baths and play grounds, daily bulletins similar to our newspapers, and libraries. Rome received tribute from the whole world, and there were many rich citizens, but there were also many more who were wretchedly poor. The capital alone had 200,000 people who were maintained at the public cost. Nearly one-half the population were slaves. The fortunate were living that life of ruinous dissipation which later made Rome the easy prey of the Gauls, and the poor aped or catered to the vices of the rich. The reference above to the epistle to the Romans shows how the low moral character of the age appeared to Paul, a serious-minded and an intelligent observer. In the provinces,



A ROMAN HALL OF JUSTICE.

especially in the cities, but also wherever the Romans settled, the same kind of conditions had begun to spread. In Jerusalem, the Holy City, there was already an amphitheatre, and there were gladiatorial shows within sight and hearing of the temple.

On the other hand, it was, like our own, an age of intellectual alertness and energy. Men of force, not only in government and war, but also in thought and education, were appearing. Upon the pathway of the splendid Roman roads and using Greek, the universal language of culture, the ideals and hopes and achievements of all parts of the world, now neighborly under one strong government, were making their ways. Traders and

travelers would bring something of this new awakening and amalgamating, even to obscure Nazareth. Jesus was protected from the degrading tendencies of Rome, while its influence in setting men on their feet, to learn, to think and to do, would stimulate Him, even in the discouraged province in which He had His home.

THE GOVERNMENT.

The known world in the time of Jesus was subject to one central power. The government of Rome was military in character. The emperors were generally successful generals, who were placed in power by the prestige of their victories and who were often in turn displaced by means of the armies of others. Judea, in which was Jerusalem, was ruled by a procurator who reported regularly to Rome. Galilee and Perea were ruled by one of the family of Herod, to whom was given the title of tetrarch, which was only less than that of king. He had his own army and raised his own taxes, but he was removable by the emperor.

Some of the Roman representatives were uncontrolled tyrants. None of them made much effort to understand the peculiar people whom they governed. All of them stamped out

the first indication of revolt with extreme cruelty. The Jews, high-spirited and ever mindful of their past and their hopes for the future, could never be content to be mere subjects of Rome. They could not boast, it is true, of their own later native kings, and it must be confessed that the Romans governed them on the whole better than they could have governed themselves, but the race of David and Solomon, of Ahab and Hezekiah, could not possibly be content unless they could be free. The village square of Nazareth, where Jesus was brought up, was the centre where many a knot of citizens frequently discussed the possibility of independence. Even while He



SOLDIERS OF THE PRAETORIAN GUARD.

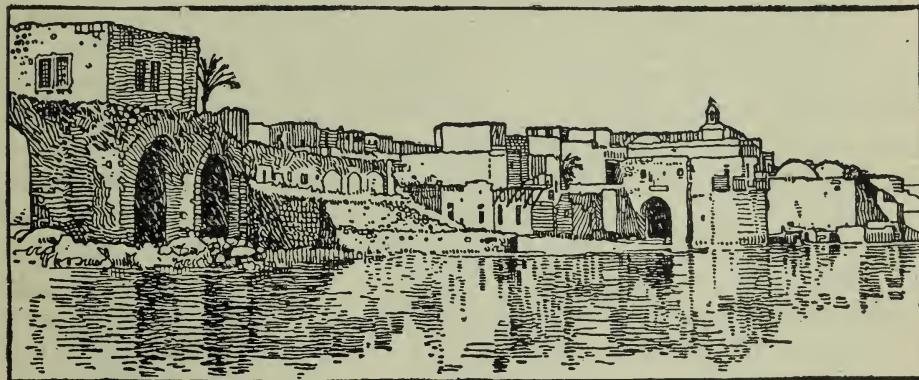
From a bas-relief. The praetorians were the body-guard of the emperor.

was a boy, Judas, the Galilean, of His own province, had unfolded the banner of revolt with the cry, "No master for Israel but

the Lord! Tribute to Rome or submission to the tyrant is treason to Him!" This revolution had been at once crushed with much bloodshed, but notice that it was a religious movement, and that religion, when Jesus was a boy, meant to be a patriot.

THE EXPECTATIONS OF ISRAEL.

The story of the coming of the shepherds, in the Gospel according to Luke, endeavors to tell us how the common people were looking for help. When they saw the angelic vision what were the words of the message? Let us read them in the Twentieth Century version. "Listen! I am bringing to you good news of a great joy which is in store for the whole nation, for there has been born to you in the town of David a Saviour, who is Christ and Master!" You see the point of their hope? Out of the native town of their hero-king is to come a national deliverer. Luke gives the views of two old people. Simeon was probably an Essene, who had lived in Jerusalem through years of disappointment, and could speak the longing of their nation. Anna was an aged but patriot woman. She thanks God that



TIBERIAS, FROM THE LAKE.

The nearest Roman city to Nazareth, built during Jesus' lifetime, and containing a palace and fortress of Herod Antipas.

He is about to "redeem Jerusalem." Simeon gives praise because one is coming who is "to be the glory of his people Israel." In the song of the priest Zacharias, the father of John the Baptist, we get the bitterness as well as the hopes of a down-trodden people. "He promised by the lips of His holy prophets of old, to be our salvation from our foes, and from the hands of them that hate us. This was the oath that He swore to our ancestor

Abraham, to grant unto us that we, being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, should serve him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him all our days."

The details of this hope as they were held, even by people of intelligence, were most fantastic. They expected preliminary omens of a darkened sun and moon, armies marching through the skies, the reappearance of Elijah and the sudden and bloodless approach of the Messiah, as a victorious ruler. His whole career would be signalized by miracles and wonders. The time was ready, but He could not yet appear because of the transgressions of the people.

THE EXPECTATIONS OF JESUS' PARENTS.

Mary and Joseph, as well as Simeon, Anna and Zacharias, may be regarded as representative of a class of people, not influential, nor rich, nor learned, but who nevertheless were the strength of the nation. One of the Psalms calls them "The Quiet of the land." They were not political schemers like the Pharisees, nor ardent revolutionaries like the Zealots, but they felt the deepest convictions as to their country's future. Joseph in his dream is represented as being told that his son is "to save his people from their sins." Mary, the carpenter's wife, rejoices, in the song which some one has called "the birth-song of Democracy," not only that "He is to put down the mighty from their seats," but that "He hath exalted them of low degree. The hungry he hath filled with good things." Jesus was born in a home where such hopes were passionately cherished. To-day our parents hope that their children may grow to be wise and successful, but the parents of Jesus, like all others in their neighborhood, dared to hope that their own child might prove to be the nation's saviour. To be a mother in Israel was more honorable than anywhere else in the world, for she might become the parent or the ancestor of Israel's deliverer.

You are to think of Jesus then as a boy who had been taught these hopes from His earliest childhood. They were discussed not only in His home but at the village well, and even in the synagogue services, which correspond to our modern church. He and the other young people were not only being trained for possible leadership, but they were all being educated to follow such a leader when He should appear. The future disciples of Jesus were being made ready as well as He.



Copyright by J. J. Tissot.

Courtesy of the Tissot Picture Society.
THE YOUTH OF JESUS.

QUESTIONS.

These questions are intended to help the pupil put the impressions which he has gathered from the preceding scripture material and lesson story into such definite form that he can set them in words. It is not necessary to write the answers in full, but it may assist memory if headings as reminders are jotted down in the spaces below. It is hoped that all the members of the class will answer these questions.

Describe the walls and the roof of the home in which Jesus lived.

Enumerate as far as you remember, the articles of furniture.

Describe the arrangements for heating, lighting and cooking.

What do we know about Joseph?

What about Mary?

What stimulating influences were there in the Roman civilization at Jesus' time?

Tell something about the city of Rome in Jesus' time.

How did the emperors reach and maintain their power?

Why was there unrest in those times?

Just what did the Jews expect for relief?

How did children come to feel the spirit of their parents and neighbors?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

One of the following will be assigned to a pupil by the teacher, for report at the beginning of next week's lesson period. It is most desirable that all be faithfully prepared, for the work of next week largely depends upon the material thus prepared and presented by the students. The report is to be made by headings jotted down in the spaces below.

Find in your school history or in the article "Julius Cæsar" in an encyclopedia, something about the character and ideals of Augustus, the emperor under whom the boy Jesus lived.

Try to think and state just how the universal Greek language and the universal Roman roads and universal peace were an advantage in making it possible to spread broadcast the teachings of Jesus.

What influence would the expectations of His neighbors have upon the ambitions of a boy like Jesus?

WORK FOR ALL.

At home color Map 21 so as to show the various crop products of Palestine, using the colors indicated by the teacher.

CHAPTER III.

JESUS' SCHOOLING.

“And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and men.” Luke 2: 52.

“These words tell the story of the normal growth of the boy Jesus, and of every boy before and after Him. ‘He grew in wisdom’—that is, mentally; ‘in stature’—that is, physically; ‘in favor with God’—that is, spiritually; ‘with men’—that is, socially. Thus the boy Jesus had a fourfold development—physical, mental, spiritual and social; and the boy we wish to help on toward manhood is in all respects like unto Him.”—*John L. Alexander.*

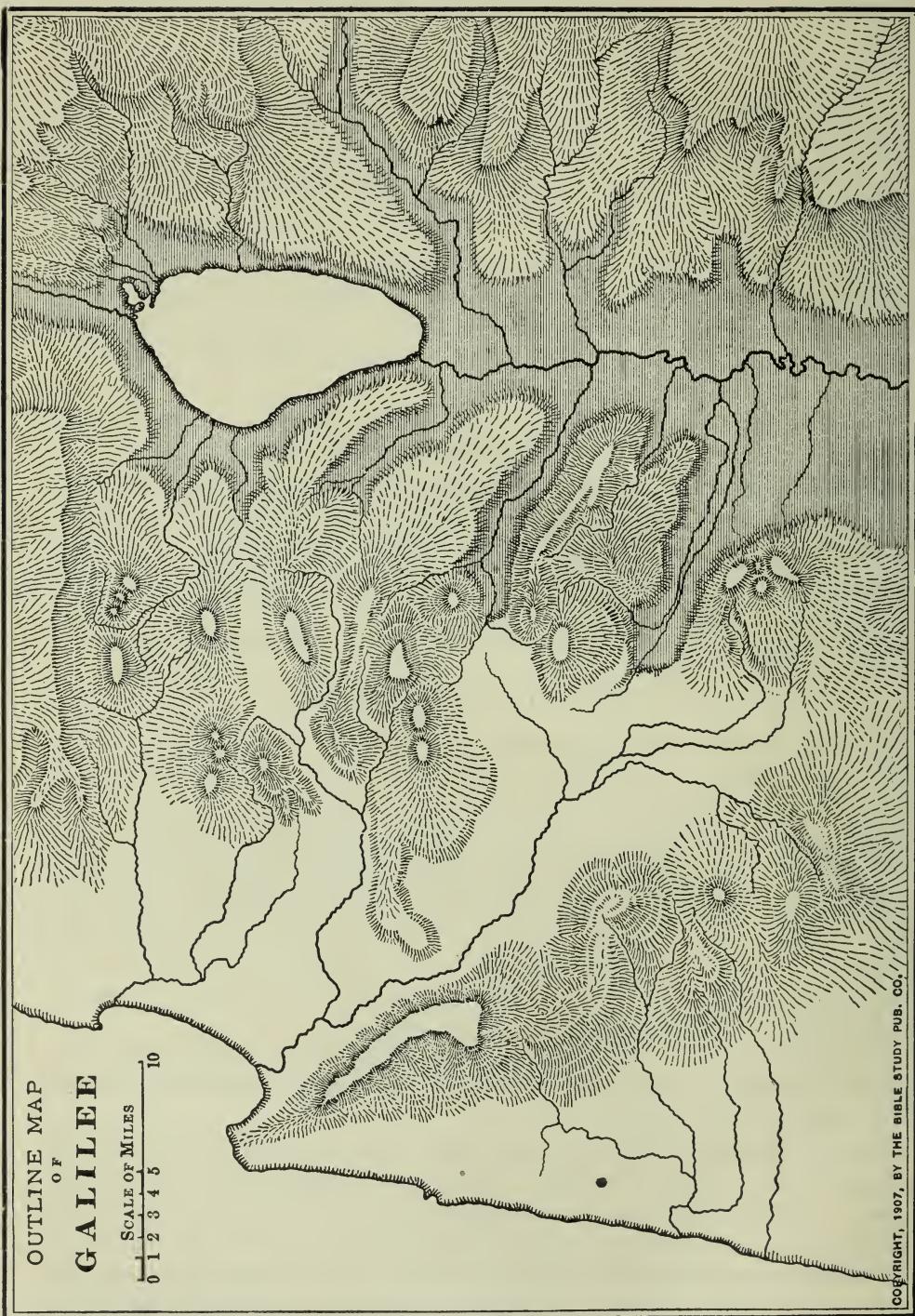
We are not told that Jesus ever went to school. You remember some one asking once how it was that He knew “letters”—this probably referred to rabbinical knowledge—since He had never had the chance to learn. There were at that time schools in many of the villages of Israel. These were usually housed in synagogues or churches, and the attendant or sexton was often the teacher. Boys of six years of age were sent to such schools, which were as free as the public schools in our own country.

EDUCATION IN THE HOME.

Before Jesus could have gone to school, however, He had His first instruction from His parents at home. The first words that He would learn to say were from the Shema (pronounced Shem-a’), which was the Jews’ solemn confession of faith. Its first words were written on parchment and enclosed in the shining metal case which was fastened to the doorpost, which He must touch every time He came in and went out; they were also placed inside the square leather boxes which were worn on the foreheads and wrists of all grown up men who were conscientious Jews. These cardinal doctrines were:

“Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord; and thou shalt love the Lord with all thine heart, and with all thy soul and with all thy might.”

Just as soon as Jesus awoke in the morning, before He stirred, He had been trained to offer a prayer of thanksgiving for being alive. Before He took four steps He must wash His hands in a special way, as a sign that He was clean in spirit as in body. If the sun rose after He was dressed He had to stop wherever He was at its first shining, whether outdoors or inside, and give



thanks. Before and after each meal He must make a prayer. The very choice of food was a religious act.

The learning of these and other sacred quotations at home was not a sanctimonious duty, but since He was taught them when He was busy with His father at work or walking beside His mother with the pitcher on her head, they were all associated with His parents' love and care, and with the sights and sounds of the wonderful world about Him.

In Palestine the father was by Jewish law regarded as responsible for his child's education. This duty was regarded as more important than his meals. To omit it would be to deserve the name of a vulgar and irreligious person, and in discharging this duty faithfully he was an ambassador of the Most High. As Moses carried the law from the mountain top down to the people, so it was the duty of every father to bestow knowledge upon his child. The parents not only taught Jesus the sacred sentences, but they also explained them by the fascinating stories of Jewish history.

JESUS' TEXTBOOK.

The school-house or church was a plain, whitewashed building, like a New England meeting-house. The boys sat on the floor in a circle with their masters, and studied their lessons at



A JEWISH SCHOOL.

the top of their voices. They had only one textbook, and that was a part of the Old Testament. This was a cylinder of manuscript written on a leather roll from right to left, wound around two metal staves and kept in a silken case in a box on the platform of the meeting-house. This was Jesus' spelling-book, arithmetic and geography. It contained the stories of His

country's heroes, the histories of His nation's wars, and the words of its best and greatest men.

Every lesson was a memory lesson. The teacher would drill his pupils day after day until they could recite word for word all the olden laws, then the stories, finally the prophets and the Psalms, until they knew by heart thousands of verses from their nation's book.

MANUAL TRAINING.

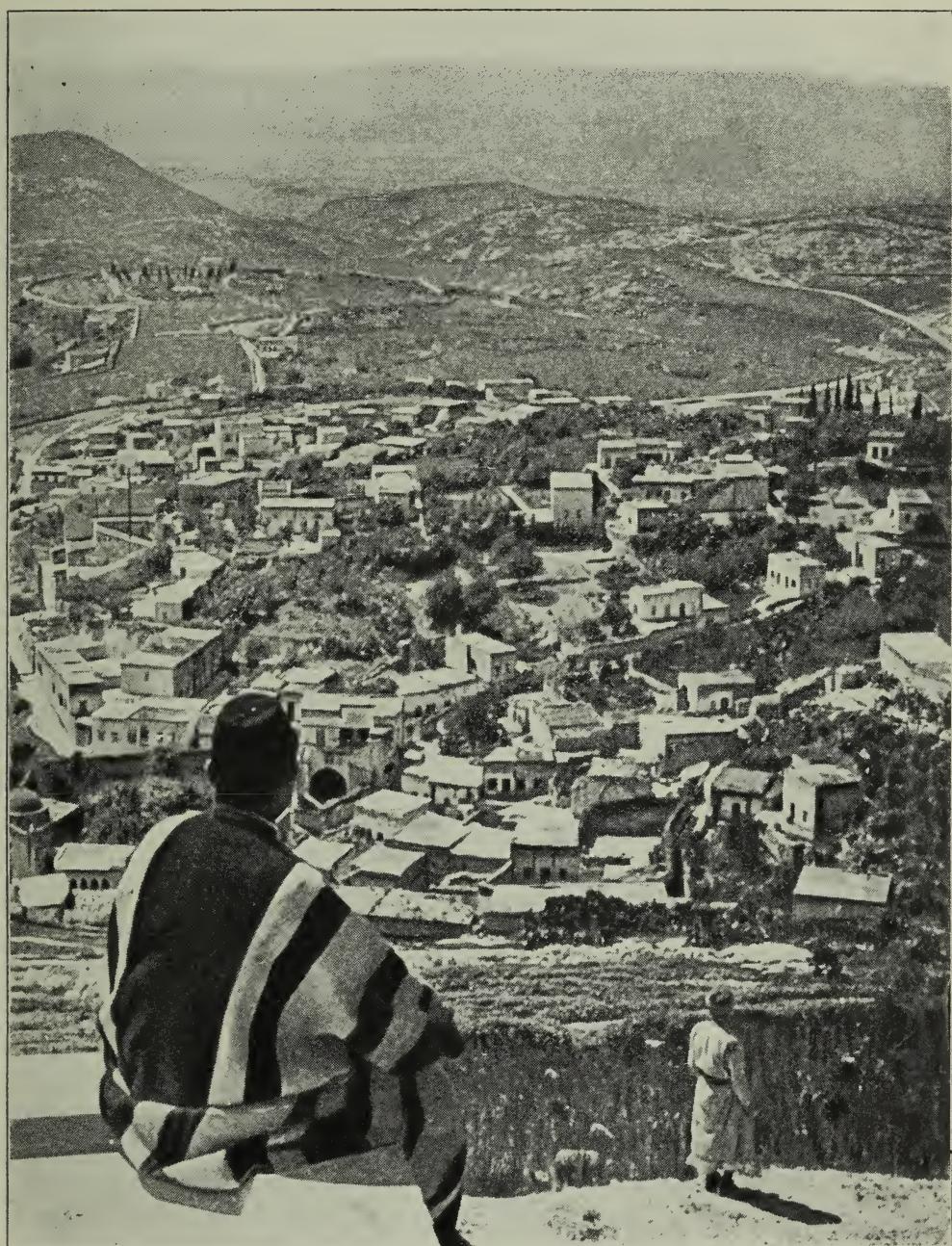
Many of the things which boys learn to-day in school were then taught at home. Every boy, no matter how wealthy his parents, must learn a trade. In learning his trade the boy would get the elements of arithmetic. Jesus learned from Joseph how to handle the saw and a mason's trowel, and how to bend wood for ox-yokes, while His sisters were learning from their mother how to sew and keep house.

THE EDUCATION OF THE FESTIVALS.

Jesus' school-days would not be tiresome, for there were no lessons in the middle of the day nor in hot weather. About one day in every four was a religious holiday, and children did not go to school much after they were twelve or fourteen years old.

A very important part of Jesus' education was the national feast days, what might be called "the Church Year" of the Jews. This was true because each feast had its meaning. The most important was the Sabbath. This weekly festival was anticipated by preparing all the food for a day in advance. The Sabbath began on Friday evening. The sacred day was Saturday. The Sabbath lamp was lighted then and burned all through the next day. It was a day of complete rest. Part of the time was spent by the father and the older children in the synagogue, and he, when he came home, pronounced the benediction upon his younger children before he sat down to dinner. The day was filled with visiting, feasting and short walks, and the Sabbath was over at sundown.

The Passover in the spring was a patriotic feast which corresponded in some ways to our Fourth of July, commemorating the independence of Israel from Egypt. Next occurred the Feast of Weeks, or of First Fruits. In the autumn came the Feast of Tabernacles, when the whole family camped out in tents for a week and celebrated thanksgiving time together. There was also the Feast of Dedication, which commemorated the revolt of Judas the Maccabee, and the springtime Feast



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

NAZARETH, AND THE PLAIN OF ESDRAELON AT S. W., HILLS
WHERE THE BOY JESUS PLAYED—PALESTINE.

of Purim, which commemorated the brave story of Esther. All these festivals were lessons in history.

When Jesus was old enough to go to church He heard the Scriptures read and explained by the most competent man in the village, and sometimes these explanations would be followed by a discussion, somewhat like that of a Bible class. This, of course, is the very best way to get at the meaning of the Bible. Jesus probably had access to a copy of the olden Scriptures, and there is some evidence that He knew a few other books, which were of a semi-sacred character.

NAZARETH AND HISTORY.

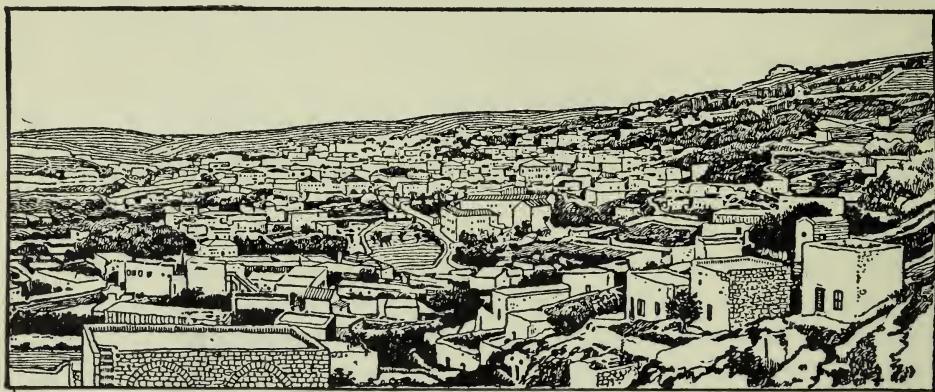
Every one who has visited Nazareth has climbed the hill at the northwest of the village in order to get its famous view. This hilltop overlooks many of the most interesting places in the Holy Land. It was indeed a series of lessons to Jesus in history, patriotism and religious spirit. Off to the north He could see the snowy shoulder of Mt. Hermon, the highest peak. At its foot was the summer palace of their Roman ruler. To the east He could see the chasm of the Jordan, and far beyond it the steep, dark walls of the tableland of Gilead, where had lived Jephthah, the great warrior, and where Gideon had chased Israel's enemies into the woods and whipped the elders at Succoth with briars. Opposite, westward, He saw a range of low hills, and beyond them a long purple mountain. This Mt. Carmel was associated with the grand story of Elijah. To the south, beyond a long, winding, narrow plain, a great triangle of waving grain and grass, were other hills. These were the mountains of Gilboa where Gideon had tested the greatness of his volunteers at the water-springs. Yonder was Tabor, where Deborah, with a young man perhaps hardly more than a boy helping her, had gathered Israel's minute men to the defense of their country. In the spacious valley below, these soldiers had defeated Sisera, and across that plain later drove furious Jehu, who killed wretched Jezebel, the enemy of his people. Yonder too died the boy king Josiah, in a daring but vain endeavor to stem the power of Egypt. The pathway through this valley is the oldest road in the world—the bridge between Asia and Africa. How much history has flowed down that stream of pilgrimage since then! Beyond rounded Tabor stood gray Gilboa again, the scene of the death of Saul and Jonathan, and of the coming into his kingdom of David, the great shepherd of Israel. What

boy could live in such scenes and not be a patriot and a worshiper of the God who had protected Israel?

THE EDUCATION FROM THE VILLAGERS.

Finally, there was the education of the village of Nazareth itself. All the grown people then took the deepest interest in children. Some of the wiser ones spent much of their time answering the questions of the younger folks, talking with them and teaching them wise sayings. One of the proverbs of the day encouraged the young to listen to such men. It ran: "Stay close by the seller of perfumes, if you wish to be fragrant yourself."

As soon as Jesus was old enough to understand, the discussions in and after the synagogue and around the village spring would give Him the standpoint of the men of His race, and occasionally a trader or a traveler would come who would bring



NAZARETH. THE HOME OF CHRIST FOR NEARLY THIRTY YEARS.

Nazareth lies on the western slope of a saucer-like depression in the hills of southern Galilee. The surroundings are beautiful, and the views from the neighboring summits are among the finest in Palestine. No other place is so intimately associated with Christ. Here He grew from infancy to manhood. Here He was divinely trained for the work before Him, and through the hard discipline of life was brought into closest sympathy with burdened and suffering humanity.

something new from the outside world. Possibly Joseph, on his travels as a carpenter and mason, would learn much that would interest his children. The language of Jesus and His parents was Aramaic, a tongue that had somewhat the relation to Hebrew that Italian has to the Latin. In some way, no doubt at the expenditure of much pains and energy, it is possible that Jesus picked up Greek, the language of courts and of culture. He must have learned the Old Hebrew, the language of the Scriptures, which had now become a dead tongue, if He read the roll in the synagogue.

ALL THIS EDUCATION WAS RELIGIOUS.

Men are discussing to-day how to provide religious education in a country in which the public school may not teach religion, but, as you can see, the Jews had, in a wonderful way, provided that all the education, both public and private, that the boys and girls obtained then was religious, that is, it tended toward love of God and country, and toward the wish to be righteous and of service to one's fellows.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture and the lesson story.

Last week we spoke of Jesus as living in the centre of four circles of expectation. Just what were the expectations of people in the world in general as to the future; what of the Jews; what especially of the Galileans; what of the parents of Jesus?

How was the schooling of Jesus related to the expectations of His race?

What education did Jesus get in His home?

What kind of manual training did He have?

What did He memorize if He went to school?

What were the four great festivals of the Jews? What did each of them commemorate?

How was the Sabbath spent by Jesus as a boy?

How did the villagers help educate Jesus?

What languages did He perhaps learn besides His own?

How did He acquire them?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

One to be assigned to each pupil.

Find out as much as you can about the Hebrew language.
(Ask this of your pastor or consult a Bible dictionary, under the headings "Language" and "Writing.")

Just what had a boy of Jesus' time learned when he left school at thirteen or fourteen?

What helpful features in modern public school education did Jesus miss?

What moral training is there in our public school work?
(Show especially how school work trains in industry, patience and fairness.)

WORK FOR ALL.

Resolved, That the opportunities for education which Jesus had were better than those given in the rural schools of our own country. (The two sides for this discussion will be assigned by the teacher to two or three leaders for a three-minute discussion by each, and then thrown open to the class for further remark and for vote.)

Draw a line down the roadway from Nazareth to Jerusalem, on the map which you will find in the next chapter, both by the Jordan route and the direct way, to indicate the pathway of Jesus on His first journey from home, and try to memorize some of the names of the places in the order in which He passed through them on the way. Any information which you can get about each of them from the Bible dictionary will help you enjoy next week's lesson better.

CHAPTER IV.

A COUNTRY BOY'S FIRST VISIT TO THE CITY.

Jesus' first visit to Jerusalem: Luke 2: 41-50.

Songs that He sung on the way: Psalms 122 and 125.

The story of the Passover: Exodus 12: 1-28.

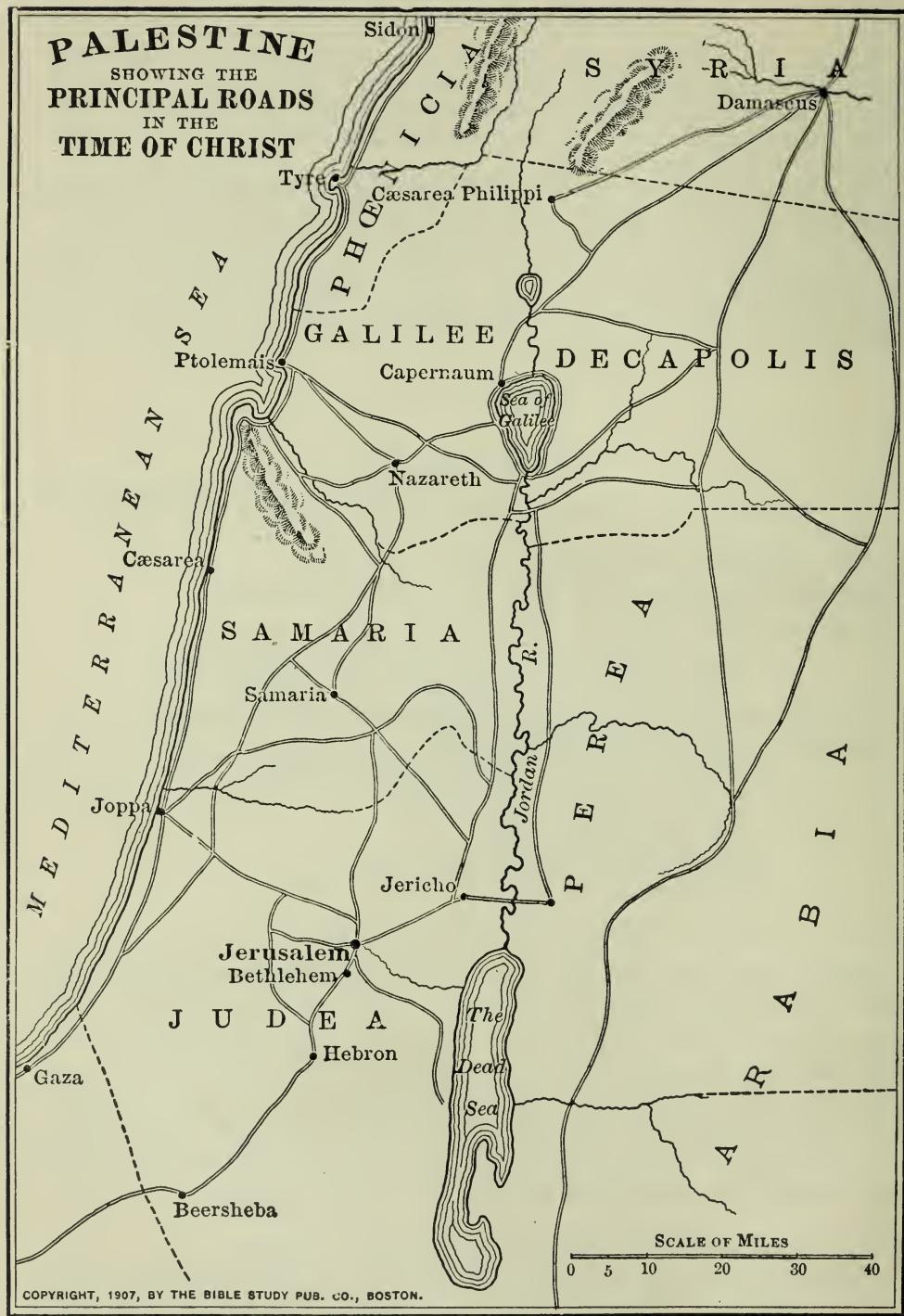
“Thine early dreams, which come like shapes of light,
 Come bearing prophecy;
And nature's tongues, from leaves to quivering stars,
 Teach loving faith to thee.
Fear not to build thine eyrie in the heights
 Where golden splendors lay;
And trust thyself unto thyself
 In simple faith alway;
And God shall make divinely real
 The highest forms of thine ideal.”—*Anon.*

JESUS' FIRST JOURNEY.

When Jesus was in His thirteenth year He was taken upon His first journey away from home. He had now become what was called “a Son of the Law”; that is, it was supposed that He was now old enough to be responsible for His own actions, and that He was upon the verge of manhood. It was now His privilege to take an active part in the principal feast of His country, and it became His duty for the rest of His life to attend that festival in Jerusalem whenever it was possible.

JESUS NOW CONSIDERED A MAN.

One of the events which made this first journey of Jesus from home significant, was the fact that before He started He put



on for the first time the clothing of a man. This garment of manhood consisted of a great striped cloak of the shape and size of a Scotch plaid, upon each corner of which was a long blue tassel. The stricter Jews also wore phylacteries. These tassels and phylacteries were worn with great pride. They were shown especially in the presence of foreigners. A Jew wore these patriotic emblems with the same pleasure which an American feels in showing the Stars and Stripes in a foreign country.

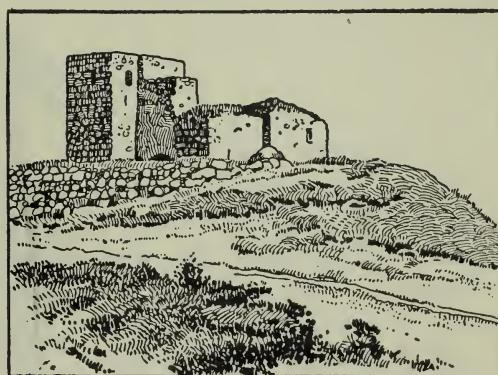
A PATRIOTIC JOURNEY.

We can hardly emphasize too much that the first journey of Jesus was that of a Jewish boy going to the Jewish capital for the greatest event in Jewish life. We who sometimes sneer at Hebrews to-day, especially the unfortunate and ignorant emigrants who flee to America from Russia, need to realize that Jesus was a member of one of the grandest races of antiquity. Not only had His race produced several of the greatest men in history, but the Jewish thinking about God constituted the greatest religious gift which any race has made to the world. "The Jewish race," says a great Scottish scholar, "is our Mother of Sorrows, our first teacher of penitence and righteousness."

WHAT HE SAW ON THE WAY.

All the fathers and mothers and the older children of Nazareth, dressed in bright colors, started together upon a camping tour, which lasted ten days. The chief men of the village went first with the village banner, and a cavalcade of donkeys and of people followed behind. No doubt the boys carried sticks to encourage the donkeys, for all, except the women, traveled on foot. Nobody was left behind except the old people and the little children.

The procession wound down the Nazareth hills to the great valley below, where, as it entered the old royal road, it joined a throng of travelers. Some were their countrymen living further north or in foreign lands, others Greeks, Romans, and peo-



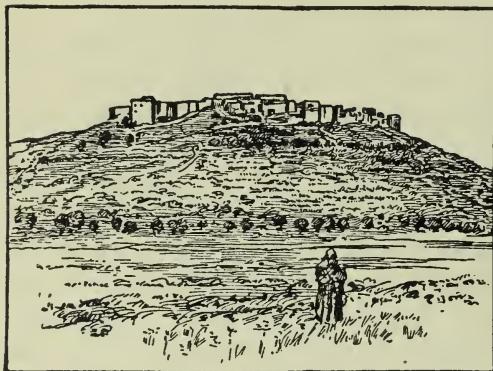
THE TOWER OF JEZREEL.

ple from Asia Minor who came for trade or curiosity to the great feast. In some of these groups stately camels ambled along, bearing bales of silk and bundles of spices and merchandise. It was springtime, and the green fields were dotted with wild flowers of many colors. The shepherd boys were watching their sheep beside the placid Kishon river, and the farmers were standing knee-deep in the verdant green.

The three days' journey passed place after place which aroused in Jesus' mind the deepest interest. First was Shunem, connected with the story of Elisha; then the weird caves of Endor, where the old witch used to live; then ruined Jezreel, Jezebel's old summer home.

The first night they camped in a sheltered spot between grassy Carmel and barren Gilboa, where the road begins to climb the tableland.

Big camp-fires were built along the plain, and it was hard to sleep in the midst of the marching songs of other pilgrims who were approaching, and the chatter of countless voices happy with reunion. The full Paschal moon was shining, and the slopes of the encircling hills were almost as light as day. The second day's journey probably took them through the highlands. A Jew traveling alone avoided Samaria, but not so a cavalcade. They passed the well where Joseph was left by his envious brothers, and came toward night beneath the walls of the city of Samaria. It was a magnificent town, but it was not a friendly one, for it was a Roman fortress and, too, the Jews had no dealings with the Samaritans. Again they camped in sight of two mountains, Ebal and Gerizim, on whose two slopes Joshua,



MODERN BETHEL.



NEBI SAMWIL.

Supposed to be Ramah, the home of Samuel.

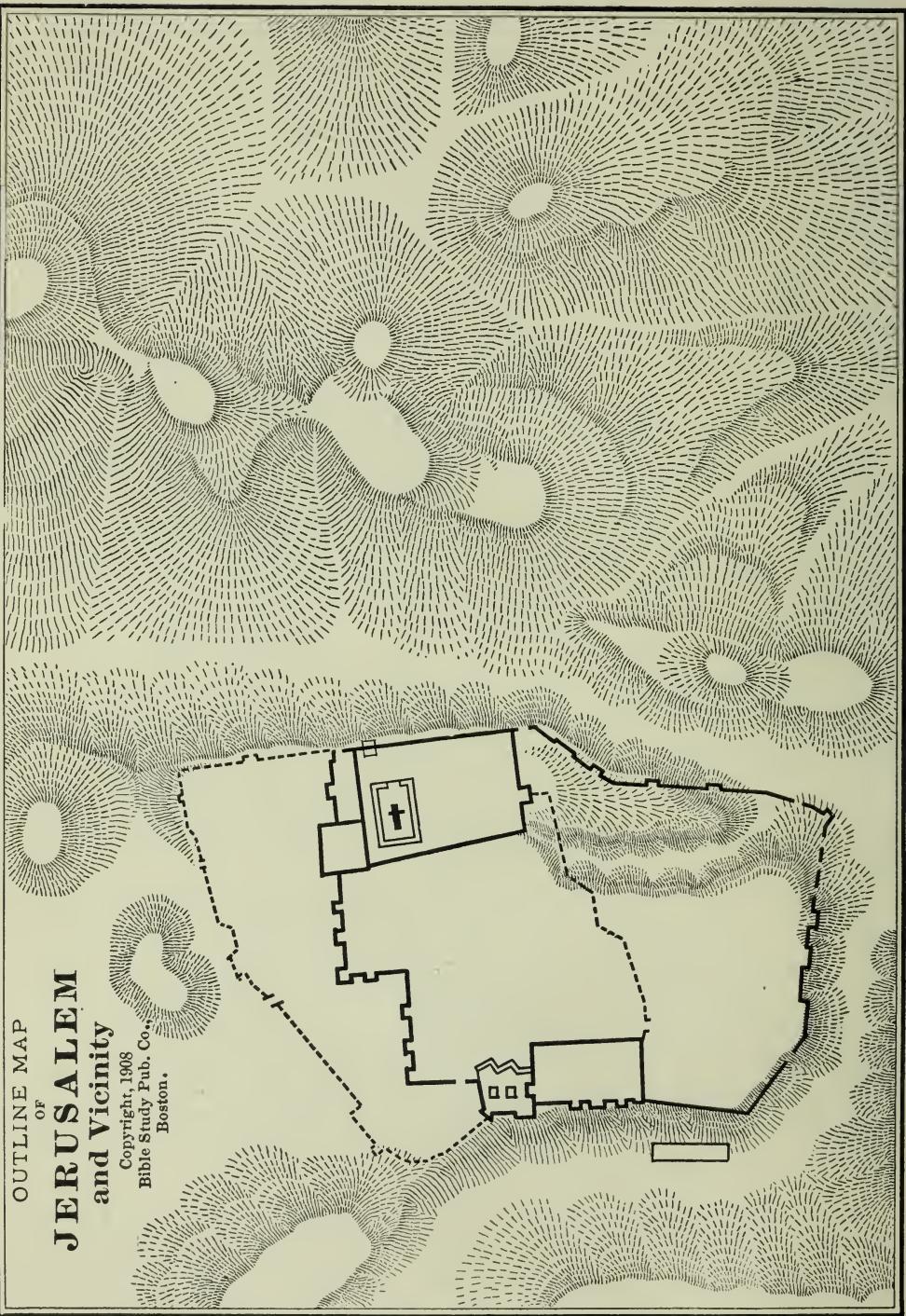
Jesus' great namesake (Joshua in Greek is Jesus) had gathered the whole nation after the conquest. The next morning they passed the grave of Joseph, and drank at Jacob's well. During the day they scrambled across the rocky slope of Bethel, where Jacob slept the first night he was away from Hebron, upon the stones of his grandfather's altar; then Ramah, where Samuel, the king-maker, lived, and Gibeah, where Saul was born. Some time the third day they found that their eighty-mile journey was nearly over, and knew that the Holy City, the goal of their pilgrimage, would soon be in sight. All the morning they had been singing the pilgrim songs, and now everybody put on his best clothes and his adornments, to be ready for entrance into the great city.

THE ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM.

There is a little collection embedded in the Book of Psalms, from the 120th to the 134th inclusive, which is believed to contain some of the songs which were sung on the march and upon the approach and entrance to the Holy City. These were strongly patriotic in character, and were probably as familiar to every Jewish child as "America" and "The Battle Hymn of the Republic" are to us. You will enjoy turning to them again, and noticing their subjects. The 121st, which has always been loved by travelers and sailors, has been called *An Evening Hymn in Sight of Jerusalem*; the 128th, *A Home Song of the Hebrew Race*; the 134th, *The Benediction of the Night Watch*, in the temple. As the pilgrims went along the footpath way, no doubt they sang the *Marching Song*, which we call the 122d Psalm.

Though long awaited, the first sight of the city was unexpected. They climbed a hillock, and lo, it was already spread before them. On the right was the great stone castle of the Romans. The old gray wall, a hundred feet above the valley, protected every side, and the hills were, as of old, around Jerusalem, but there at the left before them was the temple, a mighty cathedral, with its snowy terraces of marble, and its roofs of gleaming gold. The whole company knelt in thanksgiving as the holy house flashed into view. To Jesus it was the most glorious sight He had ever seen.

When they caught sight of the temple they probably broke out into the notes of the 125th Psalm. If the 122d was sung to a marching melody, paced by drums, this song would be set to a triumphant tune, and perhaps accompanied by trumpets.



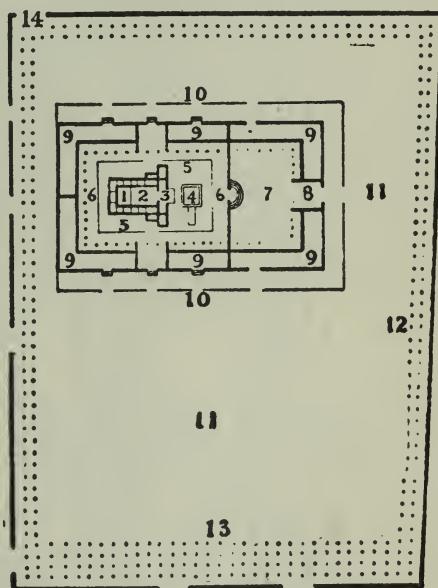
All Jerusalem kept open house and every home entertained a group of friends or strangers. Multitudes were camping out upon the hill-slopes of the Mount of Olives. In the early morning Jesus and His parents stood in the Jewish court. In the larger courtyard outside, foreigners gathered curiously and looked in, and read the stone tablet which warned them of death if they ventured further. But Jesus belonged to the chosen people, "The Sons of God," as they called themselves. And He listened eagerly and intently when the strange washings and burnings and recitatives went on, watched the incense overflow the curtains, and noted by the sound of the tinkling bells behind him, in what part of the service the unseen priest was engaged.

WHAT JESUS DID IN THE CITY.

On the great day of the feast Joseph purchased a choice yearling lamb, and after a priest had killed it Mary roasted it upon a cross of pomegranate wood. In the upper room, away from the crowd, Joseph and his wife and their boy ate the sacred meal.

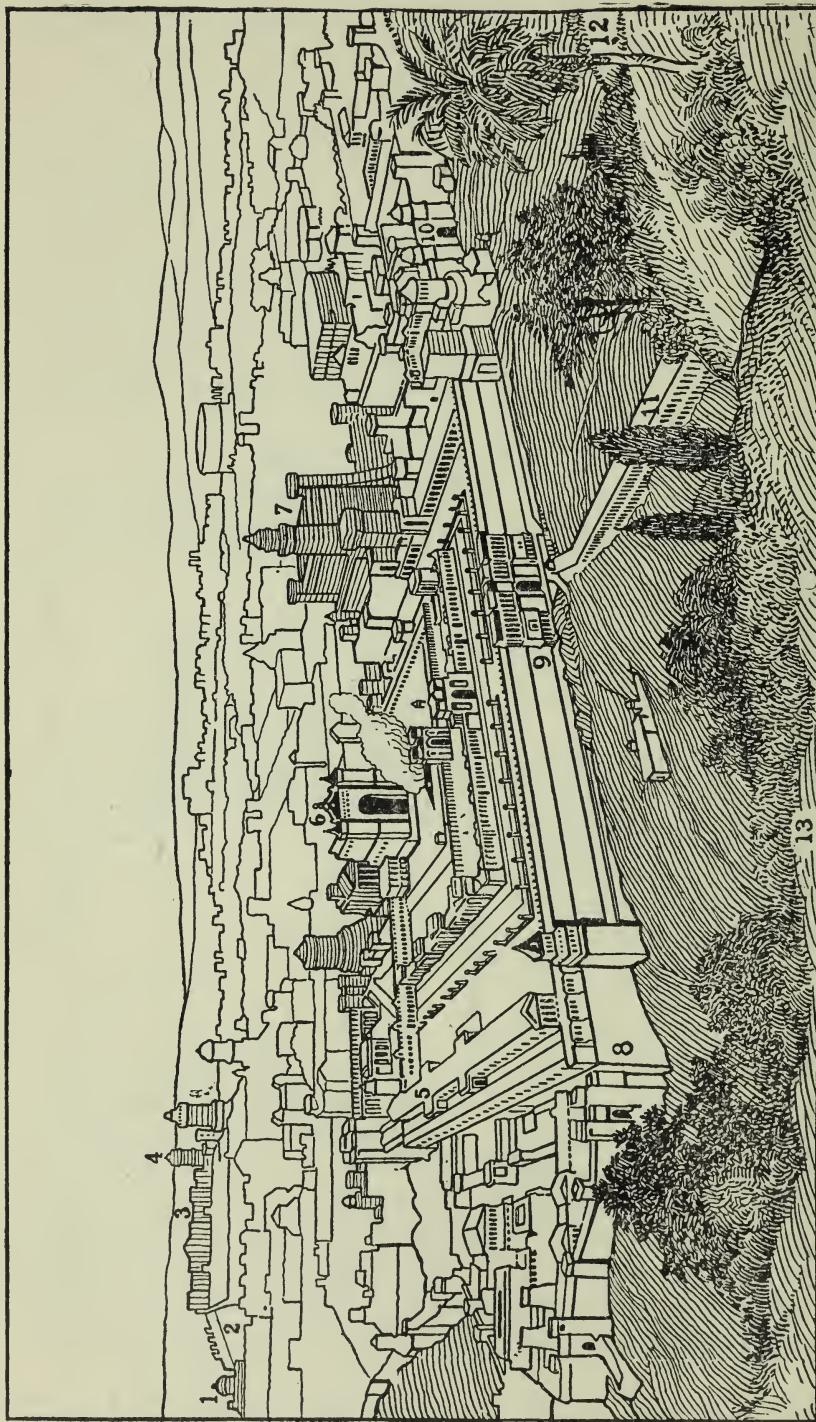
Every part of the feast was a story. These bitter herbs were a symbol of the bitterness of slavery, and the paste of fruits was the emblem of the mortar which their fathers used when they were forced to make bricks in Egypt. The silent lamb reminded them that redemption is always at the cost of life. They ate standing up and in haste, as if just fleeing from bondage. They offered the old thanksgiving prayers and sang the ancient songs. At the close Jesus was expected to ask, "What do you mean by these services?" and Joseph told again the Passover story.

You can realize how much the three days meant to Jesus.



GENERAL PLAN OF TEMPLE AND COURTS AS REBUILT BY HEROD. DRAWN TO SCALE.

1. Holy of Holies.
2. Holy Place.
3. Temple Porch.
4. Great Altar of Burnt Offerings.
5. Court of the Priests.
6. Court of Israel.
7. Court of the Women.
8. Beautiful Gate.
9. Priests' Chambers.
10. "Soreg" or Balustrade, within which Gentiles were not allowed to go.
11. Court of the Gentiles.
12. Solomon's Porch.
13. Royal Porch.
14. Entrance to Castle of Antonia.



Ancient Jerusalem, Showing Many Points of Interest in the Life of Christ.

(Based on Selous' picture of Jerusalem in its grandeur. Copyright, 1905, by Bible Study Publishing Co.)

EXPLANATION. 1. Tomb of David and "Upper Chamber." 2. Palace of Caiaphas. 3. Palace of Herod. 4. Tower of Hippicus. 5. Herod's Royal Porch. 6. The Temple. 7. The Castle of Antonia. 8. Southeast Corner of Wall. 9. The Gate Shushan. 10. The Sheep Gate. 11. Bridge over the Brook Kidron. 12. Gethsemane. 13. Western Slope of Olivet.

Jerusalem was not only the capital and the shrine, but it was also the university of Israel. Here gathered not only all sanctity and wealth, but also all wisdom. The shallow shops along the narrow lanes were filled with goods and treasures from all nations. The tongues of twenty races could be heard among the gathered thousands. From the walls Jesus could see sites that repeated the entire story of this wonderful capital. The impregnable Roman fortress next door to the temple was a reminder of the decline and changed conditions of the nation's life, but, of course, the great centre of attraction was the temple itself. The building was new and magnificent. Its many courts were always filled, the people talking, singing or praying, and even offering merchandise for sale. The services were accompanied by choruses of child musicians, and were brilliant with the bright gowns of the priests and doctors, and every afternoon, upon the grassy terrace outside the great building itself, a solemn company of scholars gathered to conduct public discussions and answer questions. In all these places Jesus took delight, but especially was He found in the temple at the hours of service, and each day He came eagerly to bring His questions, which were the old questions that He had heard discussed so often in the synagogue and market-place of Nazareth, to receive such answers as the wise men of His time could give. These things made deep impressions on the thoughtful boy, and they furnished food for many a subsequent meditation.

THE AWAKENING OF JESUS.

You know how there came a time in your own life when it seemed as if you had had an awakening, perhaps a sudden one, perhaps a slow one. It was as if you had always been blind, and now for the first time could see. You seemed to have outgrown all you had known, or had been before. You were no longer boy or girl; you were henceforth man or woman. No longer could other people settle questions for you. You must have not only the solemn privilege, but also the awful duty of carrying your own life. Was not this what Jesus meant in His reply to His anxious mother? Up to this time she had been saying to Him, "You must," and He had obeyed her; henceforth a voice within spoke, which said "I must." So He answered "Do you not know that I must be about my Father's work?"

Let us discuss in the class to-day more fully just what Jesus' awakening and this answer of Jesus meant.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What was the meaning of the garments which Jesus wore for the first time on His first journey?

What were some of the sights which He saw on the way?

Name in order five places through which He passed.

Describe briefly the camping scene at night.

Describe the family ceremony of the Passover.

Mark in pencil on the two charts of the temple, the place where Jesus and His parents probably stood at sacrifice, and the place (under No. 10 in the smaller chart) where the teachers of the law met to answer questions.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Tell something about Shunem from 2 Kings 4: 8-11.

Tell something about Endor from 1 Sam. 28: 7-17.

Tell something about Jezreel from 1 Kings 21: 1-21.



FINDING CHRIST IN THE TEMPLE
From a painting by Holman Hunt.

Tell something about Dothan from Gen. 37: 15-34.

Tell something about Samaria from 1 Kings 20: 1-20.

Tell something about Ebal from Josh. 8: 30-34.

Tell something about Bethel from Gen. 28: 11-18.

Tell something about Ramah from 1 Sam. 1: 19-23.

WORK FOR ALL.

Make a minute study of the reproduction of Holman Hunt's "Finding of Christ in the Temple," and note down briefly the meaning of its wonderful symbolisms. What is signified by the unfinished temple? By the blind beggar? By the lamplighter lighting the lamps? By the parents in the distance bringing their child? By the teacher who is blind? By the one holding his phylactery? By the boys in the picture? By the attitude of Joseph? Of Mary? Of Jesus?

Decide upon one personal problem which you agree that a young person of sixteen ought to be facing, and discuss how to meet that problem.

CHAPTER V.

THE VILLAGE CARPENTER.

Jesus' life in Nazareth: Luke 2: 51, 52; 4: 16.

The carpenter: Mark 6: 3, 4.

Some things the carpenter was fond of reading (which He quoted),

Deut. 6: 4-13; 8: 3; Psa. 118: 22-26; Isa. 56: 7; 12: 7; Zech. 13: 7.

“Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary?”—Mark 6: 3.

“A worker in a humble trade,
 A man amid the lives of men,
 Who knew its drudgery, its pain,
 Its homely joys, its heavy fears,
 For thirty silent, loving years.
 Not only by the church’s door
 Christ stands, but oftener in the roar
 Of busy marts, by plane and loom,
 Within the factory’s crowded room,
 Where laborers drudge with arm and tool,
 On wharf and ship, in shop and school,
 And claims each worker by this sign,
 ‘I too have toiled; thy toil is mine.’”

—Priscilla Leonard.

After the Passover which Jesus attended at Jerusalem we are told that He went down with His parents to His home in Nazareth and submitted to their control. Other passages tell us that He became a carpenter, and this is all that we know directly about His life for the next seventeen or eighteen years, but from the fact that soon after the end of that period He removed His family to the new home in Capernaum, we get the impression that Joseph died during Jesus’ boyhood or early manhood, and that Jesus had been engaged in the support of His own home which, as we know, numbered no less than eight persons. But so much is now known about the artisan life in Palestine in the time of Jesus, that we can construct a very interesting picture of His young manhood.

THE LIFE OF A CARPENTER.

The village of Nazareth was a rambling town centering upon a hillside. It had no paving or sewerage, and the small white houses stood along winding lanes, all of which led down to the square where was the village spring, the only water supply for the town. The people were generally poor. They had only small farms, and the hillside soil was not good. They had lost heart under the exactions of the Roman tax gatherers, and as

they were not upon a main thoroughfare nor near a city, they had no market for their products.

As the houses were of clay or stone, there was not much work for a carpenter in constructing buildings. His neighbors would do all the repair work possible themselves. Joseph would perhaps be asked to lay new roof rafters, to be coated over with clay, and to make simple furnishings of chests and benches, but the larger part of his work was probably the shaping of ox-yokes and the making of wheels for carts.

Is it not possible that Joseph and Jesus were called away at times to work at their craft upon the new palace of Herod Philip at Tiberias or even upon the completing of the temple at Jerusalem?

An artisan in those days and clear through the middle ages was a man of an itinerant calling, and had a broader experience than almost any other, except a trader or a soldier. We get our best explanation of Jesus' immediate success at Capernaum later if we suppose that He already had an acquaintance there. He may have removed His home there long before His public ministry.

JESUS' DAILY LIFE.

If Jesus was the village carpenter He must have been familiar with every home and family in Nazareth. He knew people of all ages and was acquainted with their circumstances of joy, sorrow and need. He learned about farm life as He made plows for the farmers, and He learned to sympathize with a house builder, of whom He told in His stories, who started a house without having money enough to finish it, or who tried to build his home upon sandy soil instead of upon a stone foundation. Perhaps He thought of illustrations He would use from sheep and hens as He repaired sheep-folds and made hen-coops. When He went away from home He got new outlooks on human life and toil. He had the habit of walking in the fields on Sabbath afternoons, and no doubt loved the solitude of Nazareth's lonely hilltop.



Copyright, 1886, by J. J. Tissot.
JESUS THE CARPENTER BOY.

If it be true that Joseph died when Jesus was a boy, then Jesus had to take the place of father to His younger brothers and sisters. He had, therefore, to spend much time in their education, and perhaps part of the skill of Jesus as a teacher came from His practice as school teacher to the little group of six other children, of whom He was the instructor.

Jesus had so short a time to show what religion was like, yet of His three and thirty years all but three were spent in manual toil. He never had the leisure to go into a hermitage as John did. He never took time to fast but once. He had little privacy. He had to learn life and live out His life in just the same kind of circumstances which cause us to complain or to excuse ourselves for not being more unselfish.

THE SIMPLE LIFE.

You can understand what the circumstances of a man's life have been by little incidents. You remember that when Jesus was consecrated by His parents in the temple, we are told that they brought the offering of the very poor,—two doves. Upon one occasion when one of His friends was to be married, the groom was not able to provide sufficient wine, perhaps because of the unexpected appearance of guests who came with Jesus. His disciples saved with scrupulous care any food that was left over, when they happened to have an abundance. Once they did not have money enough between them to pay their poll-tax, and when Jesus wished to show an illustration by money He had to borrow a shilling to do it. The language of Jesus was that of the poor man. Not only did He speak a rural dialect, not the language of the scholar or philosopher, but He spoke from the points of view of the laboring man. The only kinds of food He ever mentioned were bread and water, the common wine of the country, and the kid or the lamb that has been saved for the one fall festival of meat-eating or the annual Passover. His friends, Mary and Martha, and the mother of Peter's wife, as well as His own mother, did their own house-work. "If you have two cloaks" He once said, as if this were an unusual luxury. He spoke of "*the lamp*" and "*the bushel*" as if there were but one in the house. He begins the Beatitudes, especially as they are given to us in Luke, with words for those who are poor and hungry. The Lord's Prayer is a poor man's prayer, for it asks for bread for the coming day.

The persons of Jesus' stories are mostly poor. Lazarus is a

diseased beggar. In the story of the two debtors, one owes a poor man's debt. The rich fool is rich only as farmers are rich. The man who gave a great dinner had only one servant. The story of the feeding of the five thousand tells about multiplying bread and fishes, the working-man's lunch. The father in the story of the prodigal had but one fatted calf.

The silence of Jesus is as instructive as the things He said. From His vague references to kings and courts we know that He never saw a king. He refers to natural forces, sickness and medicine, not in the language of even the elementary science of His time, but in that of the common people. Jesus, so far as we know, never saw a picture. Probably He never rode a horse. He left His native land upon only one occasion, and then for only a walking trip.

JESUS REFERS TO HIS TRADE.

Do you realize how often Jesus spoke about His trade? He told once about a man making estimates for a house, of another who laid the foundation, of the heavy house beams, and of the splinter that got into the working-man's eye. He spoke of the double door and the narrow wicket gate, and of the few articles of furniture in the house. In a recently discovered manuscript Jesus is represented as saying "Raise the stone and thou shalt find me; cleave the wood and there am I." That is,—when you work as a mason or carpenter, lifting burdens or working with tools, "Remember me, the carpenter who helps you." In two of the dearest passages in the New Testament people have failed to notice that Jesus was referring to the daily work of His youth. "Come unto me, all ye that are weary and heavy-laden," He said. "Take my yoke upon you, for my yoke is easy." That is, when a young man, as a yoke-maker he could fit wooden yokes to the necks of oxen, so that they could more easily draw great loads. These sentences are a beautiful way of saying that we can all do hard work easier if one who is skilful to fit the burden to us is helping us. Again He said, "In my Father's house are many mansions. I go to prepare a place for you." In Nazareth the "mansion" possessed only a single room. In order to prepare a place for a new family it was necessary either to build on a room to the house, or to divide the one room by a partition. "Our Father's house," as Jesus says, has many rooms, and He, the heavenly carpenter, is preparing one for each of the Father's children.

JESUS' READING.

Like our own Lincoln, the young man Jesus must have read and reread the few books He knew, until they meant much more to Him than our careless reading does now. It is possible for us to know, from Jesus' later teaching, what had impressed and influenced Him most deeply in the Old Testament. It is a very interesting matter to study this out.

His deepest interest was in the prophets. The prophets of Israel, especially the earlier ones, were public men who had the greatest sympathy with the poor and the oppressed. It is doubtful if any other race ever produced a literature whose whole keynote was this of social justice. They all believed in their

country and its future, and they told of a kingdom that was to come, whose life was righteous and whose conditions were fair and happy. The Psalmists put the same thought in song, and both the prophets and the singers had faith that God, the God of the Hebrews, would bring this to pass.

Jesus did not care for the ceremonial laws, but He went back to the simpler enactments, like the Ten Commandments, and those which had to do with sincere worship, benevolence, mercy, friendship and the relations of marriage and the home.

A BOOK OF THE LAW.
From a photograph of an ancient roll of the Pentateuch at Shechem.

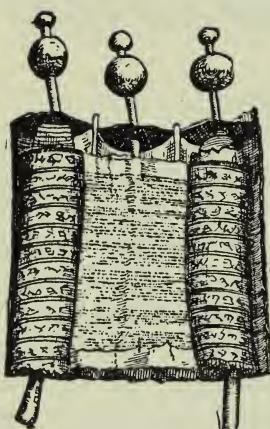
Some passages were especially dear to Him. Those referring to the better kingdom we have referred to. There are nearly a hundred repetitions in the Book of Ezekiel of the phrase "the Son of man," and this is found nowhere else in the Old Testament with reference to a human prophet. These verses Jesus loved to apply to Himself, as being likewise the special ambassador of God. Does not His whole brave life show the influence of the teaching in the Fifty-third of Isaiah about the one who is to redeem Israel not through conquest but by becoming a servant of mankind?

Mastery of the spirit of a great collection like the Old Testament is gained only by sturdy patience and well-won insight. Such a student was Jesus the carpenter.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What responsibility fell upon Jesus in His early manhood?



Just what work was Jesus called upon as an artisan to perform?

Was the business of a carpenter in Nazareth a profitable one? Explain your answer.

Give three proofs of the simplicity of Jesus' personal life.

What do the remarks He made in His teachings indicate was His usual food?

Name three of the poor people of Jesus' stories.

What do we learn from the silences of Jesus?

Describe two references which Jesus made to His own trade.

In which of the Jewish laws did Jesus feel the deepest interest?

Give one or two ideas which Jesus gained from the prophets.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Read Deut. 5 and 6. Supposing that Jesus found in these two chapters the gist of the Old Testament laws, tell briefly in your own language what you think their great essentials were.

Read Ezekiel 47: 1-12, and give the explanation which you think Jesus found in it.

Read Daniel 2, and tell how you think Jesus interpreted it.

What knowledge might Jesus have obtained from passing caravans?

What do you think He would learn when He went away from home to work?

How are the teachings of Jesus more helpful from the fact that He was once a working man?

WORK FOR ALL.

Find on the journey map the approximate locations of Jericho, Hebron, Jerusalem and the wilderness of Judea. Draw in pencil straight lines between each of these places and Nazareth, and estimate the approximate distance of each from Nazareth and from each other.

Also draw on your journey map a line along the road which Jesus took from Nazareth by way of the Jordan, to the place of John's baptizing.

CHAPTER VI.

THE MAN WHO HAD A NEW MESSAGE.

The great work of John the Baptist: Mark 1: 1-8.

The character and mission of John: Luke 1: 14-17.

Jesus identifies Himself with John's movement: Mark 1: 9-11.

"The bravely dumb that did their deed,
And scorned to blot it with a name,
Men of the plain heroic creed
That lov'd heaven's silence more than fame."

—James Russell Lowell.

THE APPEARING OF A GREAT MAN.

When Jesus was about thirty years old a man appeared in Judea, whose remarkable personality and influence were soon

felt a hundred miles away, even as far as the secluded village of Nazareth. He was a young man of Jesus' own age, the son of a priest, but his experience had been a distinct contrast to that of his distant kinsman.

There was among the Jews at that time a small group of persons, never mentioned in the Bible, who held so firmly to the national anticipations of deliverance that they had secluded themselves like monks in order to await it. They were known as Essenes. They lived together, unmarried, in a kind of monastery. They were Jews, but they took no part in the temple service.

THE MEN TO WHOM HE WENT TO SCHOOL.

You will be interested to know something about them. Philo of Alexandria, who wrote probably before the death of Jesus, says that they pursued agriculture and other useful arts, but had no care to accumulate money, and whatever they possessed they held in common. They never married, and they never held slaves. They observed the Sabbath with great care, and spent much time sitting, the older above the younger, listening while those who were most wise explained the Scriptures. "Their life-long purity and their recognition of a good providence showed their love of God. Their love of man revealed itself in their kindness, their equality, their fellowship passing all words." Even their tyrants, says Philo, had been impressed with their quiet but invincible freedom and their beautiful friendship.

Pliny the elder, who wrote about fifty years after the death of Jesus, says that while they have no children "the number of their fellows is kept up, for there flock to them from afar many who, wearied of battling with the rough sea of life, drift into their system."

Josephus says that, before the rising of the sun, which they seem to have reverenced, "they never speak a word about profane things." He says also that those who joined them were required to be upon probation for three years before entering into fellowship. Then they were "allowed to join more closely in their way of life and partake of a purer quality of the waters of purification." This use of "waters of purification" by immersion or bathing was also, he says, their daily custom before meals.

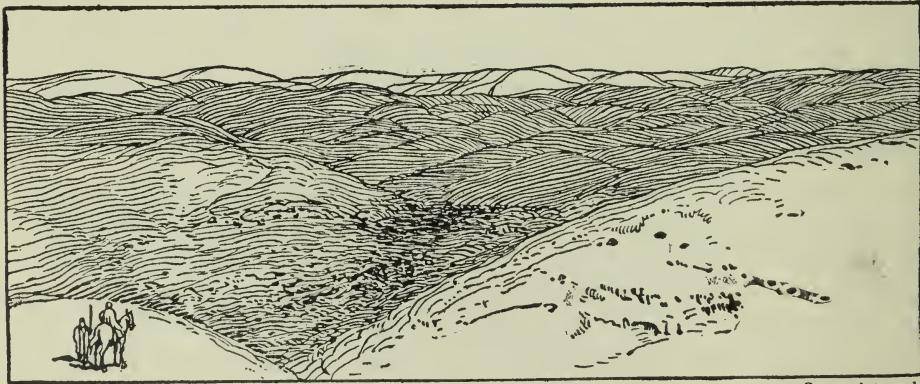
HOW JOHN REGARDED THESE TEACHINGS.

John probably did not become a member of their body, but his education seems to have been in their neighborhood and he may have been their pupil. Their beautiful order of life may have suggested to him the kingdom of brotherhood which was to come, and their ceremonial bathing, the rite of baptism as an initiation into it. John also retained their ceremonial of fasting, though he seems not to have gone to their extremes in Sabbath observance. He may have learned from them the belief in the equality of man, and the doctrine of the sharing of possessions, which he taught. They were a body of men who were trying, by uttermost obedience to the Law, to bring in the kingdom at once, and from their pure example he may have learned to feel that it could really be "at hand."

There was a narrow and intolerant and superstitious side to their faith which John also may have shared, but in this chief respect he differed from them, that he believed their principles should not be shut up to themselves in a monastery but carried out where all men might have a chance to share them. So John, though he shared their solitude for a time, either as their representative or as an outcomer from their school, finally appeared in the outer world, on the outskirts of the desert beside the great highway that leads up from the Jordan to Jerusalem.

THE ATTRACTIVENESS OF JOHN.

The attraction of John the Baptist was that he was a Man. The leaders of the people at this time were pedants, merely



THE WILDERNESS OF JUDEA.

From a photograph.

imitative scholars of the old Scriptures, but this youth was an original thinker. The authorities in Jerusalem were ritual-

ists and were ever busy about tiresome observations. Here was one who lived entirely above the level of ritual. His aim was to reverse the downward currents of his time.

His appearance was the striking symbol of his personality. He was dressed only in a rough shepherd's coat of black and white camel's hair, fastened at the waist by a girdle of lion's skin. He lived the life of a frontiersman and ate the food of the desert. He had a fierce face, and he spoke with a country dialect and in a voice of thunder. He did not weakly lament over the sorrows of the nation, and there was nothing compromising about his addresses.

"What are you here for, you descendants of vipers?" was his startling prologue to those who depended on their religious heritage. "Who told you to come here to take refuge from the judgment which is approaching?" "You say Abraham is your father? I tell you God can make better descendants of Abraham out of these pebbles."

John thus made a startling break with his own race. He also recognized no caste nor distinction in those whom he addressed. Some Roman soldiers who were thought beneath contempt by the Pharisees asked him humbly what they might do to please God. "Use violence to no one; exact nothing by false accusations, and be content with your pay," was his answer. Some tax collectors who were regarded generally as traitors because they were agents of the hated Roman authorities volunteered to proffer their services and learn the demands of God. "Extort no more than the law allows," was the prophet's simple reply. It was an easy thing to say, but it meant a revolution in their conduct. "If you have two cloaks," he said to the multitude, "give one to your neighbor." "If you have food share that also." Here was evidently a social movement, which, if it should succeed, was going to abolish poverty as well as racial barriers, and make religion a matter of every-day living. But the text of his usual addresses which he repeated almost monotonously from day to



JOHN THE BAPTIST PREACHING.

were agents of the hated Roman authorities volunteered to proffer their services and learn the demands of God. "Extort no more than the law allows," was the prophet's simple reply. It was an easy thing to say, but it meant a revolution in their conduct. "If you have two cloaks," he said to the multitude, "give one to your neighbor." "If you have food share that also." Here was evidently a social movement, which, if it should succeed, was going to abolish poverty as well as racial barriers, and make religion a matter of every-day living. But the text of his usual addresses which he repeated almost monotonously from day to

day, was this: "Repent! Repent! For the Kingdom of Heaven draws near!"

We can at least dimly see the secrets of John's influence. A rough, vigorous man who knows where he is going pushes his way anywhere. A man who curries no favor and treats all people alike wins admiration, and when one voices a nation's passionate desire and asserts that that desire is immediately to be fulfilled people see in him a leader and many desire to follow him.

And yet, when the religious leaders of the nation sent a delegation to John to ask him who he was and what he was about to do, he simply repeated a quotation from an ancient prophecy:

"I am the Voice of one who cries loudly in the desert:
Prepare the way of Jehovah.
Every chasm must be filled up,
Every hill must be leveled.
The winding ways must be made straight,
And the stony pathways smooth,
And all mankind shall see Salvation from God."

JOHN'S CEREMONY OF INITIATION.

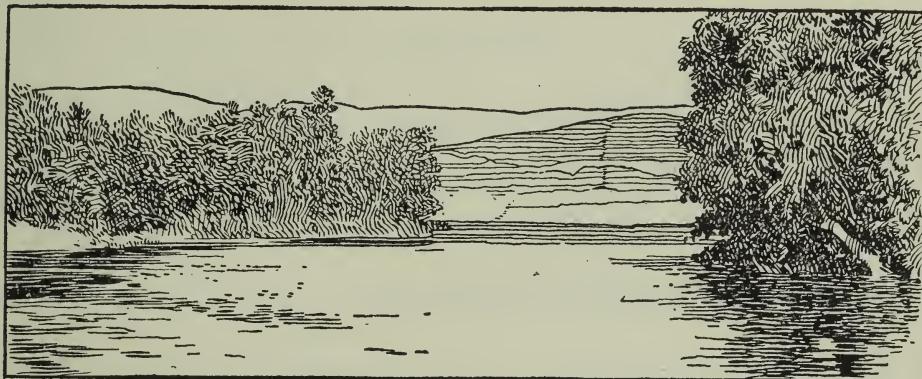
The most notable act by which John excited the curiosity of those who came to hear him was that of demanding immediately the ceremony of baptism from those who had declared themselves loyal to his teaching. The use of water for ceremonial ablutions was not unknown among the Jews, and was practiced, as we have seen, by the Essenes. But when John led his followers into the muddy stream of the Jordan, the nation's one river, and immersed them there, there was no doubt in the minds of those who subjected themselves to this thorough and rather humiliating symbol of purification that he was organizing at least the elements of a band of men who were set apart for some heroic purpose. Some persons saw in him the spirit of their old patriot prophet Elijah, who had dared to stand almost alone against the plots of the foreign and idolatrous queen Jezebel. Others felt that his proclamation of the kingdom meant the organizing of a rebellion.

JESUS' OPINION OF JOHN.

Jesus hastened from His hilltop home, down the Jordan valley, to meet John. Through all these years of silence He had been

studying the same problems which John had faced in the desert and He was, no doubt, now feeling very clearly that His own great future was just at hand. He must have listened to the impassioned speaker with admiration. He must have felt toward him something of hero-worship.

But even more than by mere admiration and feeling did John impress Jesus. Jesus was a shrewd student of men. He measured His words also. The remark He made about John afterward should cause us to revise our opinion of this underestimated man. Jesus said of him that no greater man had been born among men than this same John. Does this seem exaggeration? But consider just what Jesus meant. He did not



From a photograph.

THE JORDAN RIVER.

At the traditional place of Christ's baptism.

refer to his fame or his personal achievements or even his influence. He compared him with the Hebrew prophets, who were the greatest men He knew. He considered the visionless times in which John lived and remembered how he rose above the greatest of the prophets in his ignoring of race and ritual and in his practical demand that men should stop waiting for the golden age and should actually begin to create it. He saw in him the most inspired and also the most effective apostle of human betterment who had yet appeared. And can you compare, in these two great factors of magnificent conception and practical endeavor, any philosopher of Greece or Rome?

THE ENLISTMENT OF JESUS.

Jesus qualified His praise of John. He said that children who should live in the kingdom when it should actually come would

be greater than He, that is, greater in their knowledge of what it should really mean to men. Jesus differed with John in many ways. For instance, He saw God as the God of construction and not of destruction, as John did, but it is a strong tribute to His greatheartedness that He bowed Himself at the feet of John as his follower and allied Himself with this movement for the purifying of the nation's life. When Jesus came and asked to be baptized by John He was not claiming leadership, He was becoming a soldier in the ranks, but it was a distinct enlistment.

And it was then, according to accounts that seem to have come from Jesus' own lips, that He felt the Spirit of God descend into His life and set Him apart for His life work.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

In what direction from Nazareth, and how far away, did John the Baptist do his work?

Tell what you can about the Essenes.

What did John borrow from them?

How did he differ from them?

Describe John's personal appearance.

What was his advice to the soldiers?

What to the tax collectors?

What was the meaning of the ceremonial which John demanded?

What made John so attractive to the multitude?

Just what was he trying to get people to do?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

What does baptism mean in the Christian church to-day?

Why does it precede rather than follow church membership?

What do you think would have been the result of John's work if he had continued without being interrupted by imprisonment?

From what you know of Jesus and John so far, how do you think they differed? Upon what did they agree?

WORK FOR ALL.

Color upon the accompanying map the desert portions, and draw a circle around the portion which you think was familiar to John and to Jesus.

CHAPTER VII.

JESUS' CHOICE OF A CALLING.

Jesus' choice of a calling: Mark 1: 10-13; Matt. 4: 1-11.

“The Son of man came not to be ministered unto but to minister”: Mark 10: 45.

“When the fight begins within himself,
A man's worth something.”—*Robert Browning*.

You have been learning what Jesus has been doing. What do you suppose has been going on within? We have some valuable

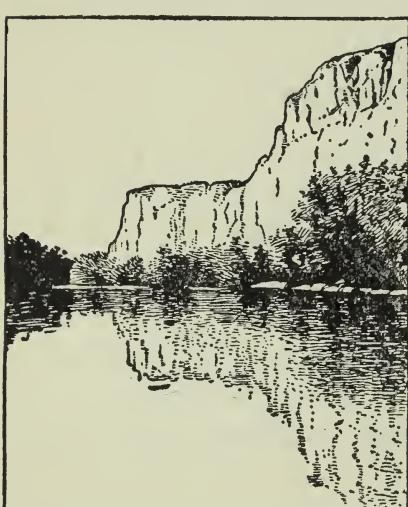
accounts, which seem to have come originally from Jesus Himself, which tell us so much about what Jesus was thinking during these days that they may almost be called pages from His moral autobiography.

We generally know these stories as “the temptation” of Jesus, but that word is hardly large enough. They describe to us Jesus' choice of a calling.

Picture the circumstances. Jesus feels a sudden reaction from the tumult of the crowd. He sees

the grandeur and He sees too the limitations of John's idea. All the pent-up questions of His early manhood press for answer at once. A spiritual voice within Him tells Him that He needs to be alone and find out just what His attitude toward life is going to be.

Something of this sort happens when a young man or woman comes to the city to begin work or school. He leaves much behind, the cosy home atmosphere, the indulgent and approving faces of his parents and family, and the customs and recreations of his neighborhood. The ideals that are cherished by those whom he knows and loves meet a real test. He takes up much that is new: new work, difficult because unfamiliar, new teachers or employers and companions and the inspiring opportunities of a larger life. How hard it is to be at home in the new surroundings, to face each fresh day without any guidance but his



THE RIVER JORDAN, NEAR JERICHO.

own wisdom, and how careful is his task in discriminating between the ideals of his old surroundings and of the new, and in deciding which shall really be his own.

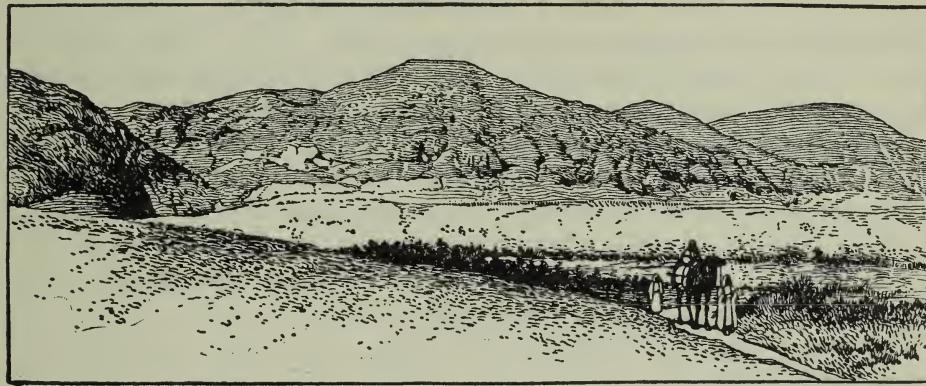
And so it was with Jesus.

Most pressing of all, no doubt, was this inquiry which Jesus may have put to Himself, in some such words as these: "Here am I, with only one life to invest for My Father. Just how am I to put it to service? How may I avoid mistake and waste, and make it count most for the kingdom that is coming?"

Well, this is the question you too have to answer, and you must be interested in trying to learn how Jesus faced the problem.

WHAT HAPPENED IN THE DESERT.

Many scholars think that it was winter when Jesus went down into the desert of Judea. It is a region of cañons with tawny sides of rock and sand, little vegetation, a few scanty brooks and many caverns, in one of which perhaps Jesus camped out. Mark states that "He was with the wild beasts," but some of the manuscripts read instead, "He was with the En-



From a photograph.

THE MOUNT OF TEMPTATION.

The Mount of Temptation (*Mons Quarantania*), the traditional scene of Christ's temptation, is on the eastern edge of the rugged wilderness of Judea, a few miles north of Jericho. In its bare and desolate sides are many holes and caves which were the homes of hermits in past ages.

lightened," that is, in a monastery of the Essenes. This reading is probably an error. It is not impossible, however, that Jesus shared their hospitality. Even to this day this region contains many hermit shelters. It is not necessary to suppose that Jesus remained entirely in one spot. The temptation stories tell us of His being upon an exceedingly high mountain and again in the city of Jerusalem. One is sometimes never more

alone than in a strange city, and it is possible that Jesus thought out part of His problem walking in the country or even resting in the temple courts.

The fasting too is not to be made too prominent. It was not like Jesus to undertake deliberately to weaken His body or to imitate ascetic customs. He was no doubt too engrossed to think of food, and His mind grew clearer as He freed it from the demands of the body.

Nor are we to think of the tempter as a Satan with hoof and horns, or even, as Bengel has suggested, a scribe, who propounded questions that should shake His faith. He was tempted "in all points as we are," and we are never tempted in such fashions. We are always tempted from within.

Indeed if the stories of the temptations represent at all what came to Jesus, they must have come from His own thoughts, and is it not best to think that He tried, as Orientals do, by a series of striking pictures to represent what took place in His own heart? Let us see if we can read those pictures.

WHAT THE TEMPTATIONS WERE.

The first was temptation of the body. The bodily life is good. Jesus was no ascetic. He was a sturdy workingman. He had great endurance, and wholesome physical ideals.

He had to face the question, Is a life of bodily indulgence worth while? This is the first and hardest temptation which young people have to face. It comes just when the bodily energies are at full tide, when the passions are fiercest, when the power of self-restraint is least trained, when the risks of indulgence are most readily accepted.

The body has its rights, its innocent joys, its demands for satisfaction.

How did the problem come to Him? Was He tempted by that primal desire, physical indulgence? We cannot deny it, if He were really a man. Was He tempted to a life of ease and of luxury? Who has failed to meet such enticements?

You know how this trial meets you now, the temptation to use the body as a toy, to overdo in the quest of pleasure, to be hungry for a perpetual good time. Jesus did not undervalue or despise any of these things. He was even criticised for being too fond of festivals. But He decided that it was not worth while to live just for these things. Man cannot live upon such things alone.

There was a sect in Jesus' time that had chosen this way of life, and one of the callings that beckoned to Him was theirs. They were called Sadducees. They met the unrest of Roman rule by saying: "Let us not worry about the future. Let us be comfortable and keep out of trouble. We will live our own lives, and let the country take care of itself." To this group belonged many of the priests, most of the educated people and all the wealthy people. If Jesus would identify Himself with them, His would be an easy life.

In our own time we see many who yield to this fever for indulgence as a life pursuit. The quest for money, for luxury, for selfishness has become a national peril. Others stand sternly above this passion, which is half savage, and work earnestly for the social good. Every young person comes to the parting of the ways, and has sometime to decide where he belongs.

Jesus came to this point, and He determined that He would not side with the party of indulgence. He would not be a Sadducee.

THE CALL OF ENTHUSIASM.

Next enthusiasm claimed Him.

Enthusiasm is a good thing. How much the world has been moved forward on the strength of the enthusiasts!

But enthusiasm has its perils. You know them. There is the tendency to "spill over," to overwork for a week and then be incapacitated for work for a month; to have violent attachments and fierce loyalties, succeeded by indifference; to have hysteria, to do spectacular deeds; to show off; to bluff; to do for effect; to act on shallow learning or imperfect preparation; to dream impossible achievements and expect magical results.

This trial came to Jesus. Popularity was easy just then. He could easily outdo John. He could state things in an attractive manner that would have overshadowed the desert enthusiast. He could climb any "pinnacle" and by leaping off gain an open-mouthed following.

There was a party, even a vocation, that represented that temptation at that time. They were the Pharisees. Originally by their pure principles the Puritan and patriotic leaders of the nation, they had, in their enthusiasm for ideal conditions, separated themselves not only from the hated Romans but even from the common people. They had raised the commentaries on the ancient laws to a fetish and they spent all their time anxiously worshiping them. They anticipated a magical com-

ing of a Messiah-Prince who should ride into Jerusalem through the air, and in reward for their fidelity to the law do a few sensational deeds that should lift Him and them to the summit of glory in a kingdom of the miraculous.

This very sort of temptation meets you now. America especially knows the man of the "short cut." Ours has been called "the Gilded Age," meaning the age that accepts imitations. We prepare for life with shallow courses and shoddy work. Much of our prosperity and a good deal of our play is gambling. We are guilty of inflated living. We expect results without waiting for them and without deserving them.

Is it not hard, in school, in society, in business, in politics, to belong to the side of sobriety and thoroughness?

Jesus determined that He would do that, and He would not be a Pharisee.

THE CALL OF POWER.

Finally power beckoned to Him.

Power is good also. Jesus had by this time discovered that He was a man of power. You cannot be with men without unconsciously measuring yourself, and one of the joys of youth is the feeling that one is able, and able to match up to the strongest.

But power is often misused. To-day you know how the lawyer often misuses his knowledge, the physician his skill, the minister his influence, the business man or the corporation of business men their opportunity, the strong nation its strength. Ours is an age of power. It worships power, and it yields to the men of force.

Always misused power involves the selling of one's ideals. It means that simple, old-fashioned morality has to give way to opportunity, and one who yields to this temptation can no longer live on good terms with his conscience.

Power had its votaries in Jesus' day. These were the Zealots. Jesus later had one of them as a disciple. They were revolutionaries, perhaps somewhat like modern anarchists. They said: "Let us risk all! Let us start riots against our tyrants. Let us call every man a traitor who will not fight!"

It was an attractive call, and it had its excuse. The Jews were truly a subject people, and patriotism seemed to counsel resistance. There was also some prospect, in those times of unrest, for success. Perhaps Jesus could have started a religious war, and become a Mohammed.

But the Jews at their best had never proved able to govern themselves. The world was not ripe for a republic. Its so-called republics were military despotisms. Jesus could have baptized His nation in blood, and perhaps risen to the "mountain top" of despotic power.

Another group of men who not only sought but possessed power existed in the priestly party in Jerusalem. They were led by Annas, an ex-high priest, and were of the Sadducean faith and practice. They wielded great political power, by playing into the hands of the Romans; they retained spiritual dominance by depending upon the religious devotion of the people, and they had enriched themselves by seizing the monopoly of the sale of whatever was used for the temple sacrifices. Those who allied themselves with this unscrupulous group were the virtual rulers of Palestine.

To-day we who are young hear a similar call. The lust for power grips us. We see men stand above others through sheer lack of conscience. We have in politics the demagogue, in society the "climber," in the labor world the "grafter," in business the monopolist. Always there has been the sale of ideals, the use of unscrupulous methods, the denial of brotherhood. The individual has, as Jesus would say, "knelt down to Satan."

Jesus resisted the temptation of "success." He did not become a Zealot. He did not join the high priestly party.

THE SUMMARY.

What Jesus finally did, then, in those fierce days in the desert was, first: to put His body in its rightful and minor place; to curb His enthusiasms within the limits of efficiency; to hold His powers in the sway of conscience. He refused money-greed, short cuts and substitutes and the degradation of His talents. In our age when we have a clan of money-barons, a class of climbers and a group of men of conscienceless power who are conspicuous but not honored, Jesus would walk soberly apart.



THE TEMPTATION OF JESUS.

WHAT CALLING DID JESUS CHOOSE?

Let us answer boldly, HE CHOSE TO BE THE MESSIAH.

Not—let us hasten to say—the Messiah-Prince whom the Pharisees expected, but the Messiah-Servant whom the noblest of the prophets had foreseen. He had read the prophets more closely than had even the scribes of the law. He saw that the whole sympathy of the prophets was with the man who is a servant, the poor and the oppressed. For the relief of a nation of such the prophets had asserted that a Messiah (the word means an "anointed" or commissioned one) was to come. Jesus seized the hint that is found in the Fifty-third of Isaiah. "A nation of servants must be saved by their Servant," He had said. "I will try to be that Servant."

The task of Jesus through life was to be the Messiah which His people needed, but which they did not expect or want. How He accomplished this marvellous task is the life story of Jesus of Nazareth.

WHAT THIS MEANS TO US.

These choices of Jesus of the great motives and responses to duty are so close to our own decisions which we are making that they may well nigh be put in a set of personal resolutions, somewhat as follows:

I will make my comforts, my leisure, my pleasures help and not hurt the life of the spirit;

I will care little whether men know me, but much whether they feel me;

I will not get power or wealth at the price of compromise with my conscience and I will use whatever wealth or power comes to me as a steward of my Father;

And in all my choices I will never forget that I am a son of God.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Why did Jesus go off alone at this time?

What was the one great question which He had to decide?

How do you think He spent His time when He was in retirement?

What was the meaning of the temptation of the loaves?

What sect in Jesus' time had yielded to that temptation?
In what ways?

What did the temptation of the pinnacle mean?

What sect had yielded to that temptation? In what ways?

What was the meaning of the temptation of the mountain-top?

What sect had yielded to that temptation? In what ways?

Why did Jesus refuse the first temptation?

Why did He refuse the second?

Why did He refuse the third?

Just what did Jesus decide should be His life work?

How may we imitate each of the decisions of Jesus now?
(Three answers.)

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

What kind of man would Jesus have become if He had yielded to the first temptation?

What would have been the result if He had yielded to the second?

What would He have attained if He had yielded to the third?

From your study of Jesus' choice write down three tests which would be good guides to a young person now in making the choice of a calling.

Give one or two suggestions as to personal plans for a boy or a girl who wishes to live according to the spirit of Jesus' choice, but does not yet know what vocation to choose.

CHAPTER VIII.

HOW JESUS WENT ABOUT HIS WORK.

Jesus goes to His own country: Mark. 1: 14, 15.

He begins to teach: Luke 3: 23; 4: 14, 15.

How Jesus went about His work: John 4: 4-42; Luke 7: 36-50.

“They call Him the Son of God because He thought everybody was.”—*Gerald Stanley Lee.*

Just at this point when we are most eager to know how Jesus put His life choices into effect, the evangelists leave us without complete information.

We know in a general way that, not long after the baptism of Jesus, the public work of John closed as suddenly as it had begun. The arrest of the fearless preacher ended his mission. Henceforth he decreased as Jesus increased in public notice.

Jesus returned to His own province and began to repeat the substance of the message which John had spoken: “The time is fulfilled! The kingdom of God is at hand! Repent, and believe in the good news!”

The evangelists are so entirely intent upon the public life of Jesus that we get only an occasional glimpse of the personal side. We do, however, by careful scrutiny, find that, behind the public teaching, Jesus was continually engaged in personal conversation. This method probably, if we could know all the facts, would turn out to have been the most effective instrument that He used. You will recall in your own lives that while you have often been stirred by some public address, the real changes of your thought and act have been more greatly helped by personal converse with a friend. It is a slow method and few have the patience to depend upon it, but Jesus saw that if He were to lead a nation toward righteousness He must begin to help make a nation of righteous persons.

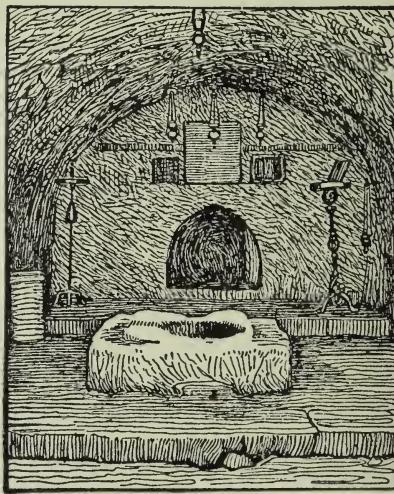
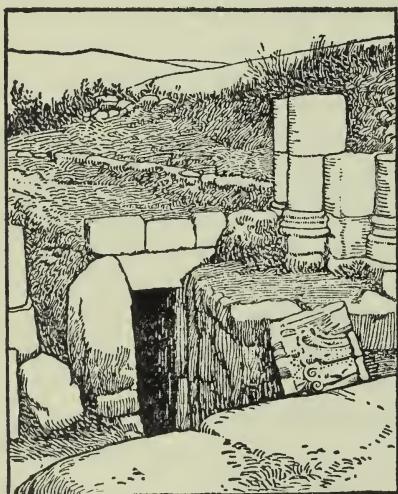
When Jesus began to gather about Himself a circle of comrades, as we shall see Him doing in the next chapter, it meant the beginning of daily conferences with them which continued for a space of two or three years. He therefore spent more time in this way of personal approach than in any other. Many of His teachings which we think of as having been delivered in public address are no doubt handed down to us out of the memories of those to whom they first came not as discourses but who took part in them through question and dialogue in quiet interviews with Jesus alone.

The fourth and latest of the Gospels emphasizes this feature of Jesus' work, but as it places events in order of argument rather than of time we are not always sure how the conversations which it reports are to be dated. There is one conversation, one of the first related in the Gospel according to John, which we are sure from its contents did not come early in Jesus' ministry, but which the author places there because it is so typical.

THE SAMARITAN WOMAN.

The evangelist speaks of Jesus as having come at mid-day to the well of Jacob which is between mounts Ebal and Gerizim in Samaria, near a hamlet called Sychar. He sits down beside the well, tired and dusty, while His companions go into the village to buy food. While He is there a woman of the village comes out to draw water.

The story puts before us an individual who would seem to be hopeless as a subject for moral betterment by personal approach. In the first place, she was a Samaritan, a member of that mongrel race whom all Jews despised and who, set in the isolation



ENTRANCE TO VAULT OVER JACOB'S WELL. THE VAULT AND THE MOUTH OF THE WELL.

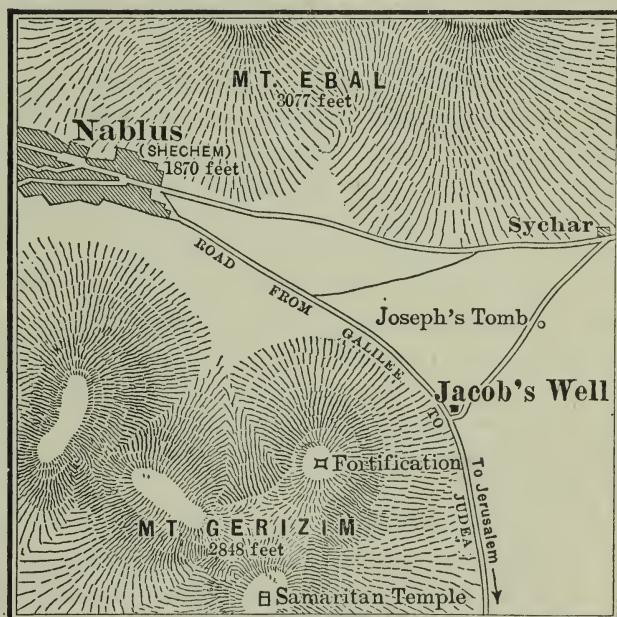
Jacob's well has been covered by a succession of churches, the last of which was destroyed at the time of the Crusades. Many of the ruins now remain. The mouth of the well is several feet below the present surface of the ground, and is approached by steps leading through a small doorway into a vaulted chamber about fifteen feet square.

of contempt in the heart of the land, had come in time to deserve most of the contempt that had been heaped upon them. They were regarded as many Christians to-day regard Mormons.

Although they had in times past been aggressive enemies of the Jews, they had Hebrew blood in their veins and in their own temple on the top of Mount Gerizim they continued to sacrifice according to what they held to be the primitive Jewish custom. This fact added sectarian to racial hatred between the two peoples. This woman herself was, as her appearance showed, dissolute in character, and probably, as her untimely coming to the well suggests, a lazy slattern. It was then regarded as a breach of etiquette for a man to hold conversation in any public place with any woman not of his own family. The criticism which the companions of Jesus expressed of Him on their return was quite natural. Most rabbis would have entirely avoided so difficult and delicate a situation, by refraining from noticing the woman. It might have been questioned by any man whether there was any helpful fellowship possible between himself and one who was bad and idle and thoughtless. And especially so here. The life of the pure-minded Jesus was like a volume bound in gold, hers was like a yellow journal.

The Fourth Gospel tells us how Jesus instantly threw aside conventionality and, seeing here a fellow creature who was in bitter though unconscious need, endeavored by friendliness to help her. The conversation that followed is rightly regarded as one of the most remarkable dialogues in history.

How would you win the friendliness of an evil doer? By doing him a favor. This is the natural answer, but there is a deeper one. By allowing him to do you a favor. To do a favor may make its recipient uncomfortable, but he who



PLAN OF NABLUS (SHECHEM) AND VICINITY.
Showing the location of Jacob's well and Sychar.

does you a favor is at once set at ease and feels presumptively friendly.

There was only one favor which the Samaritan woman could do Jesus, and He asked it.

“Will you give me a drink of water?”

As the woman sank her bucket into the well, which was over a hundred feet deep, she could not forbear referring to the ancient feud.

“You must be very thirsty to be asking for a drink from a Samaria woman.”

Jesus probably told her that He did not share in the old prejudice, but went on to say that He too could give a favor if asked.

“There is a thirst which I too can help to quench. If you should ask Me I could tell you of a living water better than this.”

The Orientals are fond of talking in pictures, and the woman knew that this statement of Jesus was a puzzle, which she was asked to solve. But she chose to be frivolous.

“Sir, you know that you have nothing to draw with, and the well is deep. Are you greater than our father Jacob who dug this well, and gave drink here to himself and his sons and his cattle?”

“After one has drunk of this water one becomes thirsty again, but if you should have the water that I can give, you will never again be thirsty. The water that I shall give will become in you a well of water, springing up unto eternal life.”

But the woman, who could see plainly now that He was asking her to think of His deeper meaning, refused to be serious.

“Ah, sir,” she said yawning, “do give me this well of water, so that I shall not be thirsty and have to come clear out here.”

Jesus had been willing to break the rules of etiquette so long as the woman offered the same respect which He showed to her, but when she became silly He could do nothing but ask that the conversation should continue according to Oriental notions of propriety.

“Go and call your husband,” He said quietly.

“I haven’t any husband,” she answered airily.

The face of Jesus was downcast as He said in a low tone:

“The man with whom you are living—is not—your husband?”

There was a moment of silence. It did not take penetration to make this remark as much as it did courage. The tone of

Jesus was, strangely enough, not of reproach but of pity. Still mockingly, but no longer smiling, the woman said,

“You are a soothsayer, I see.”

Although she was embarrassed, the woman did not go. As if she would atone for her frivolity, she turned the conversation in a religious direction, and as though she would essay to prove that she was correct as a theologian even if she was imperfect as a moralist, she pointed to the temple on the adjoining hill.

“Our forefathers worshiped on yonder mountain, but your people say that Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.”

“Woman,” said Jesus earnestly (“woman” was a title of respect, and Jesus had not used it before in speaking to her), “believe Me, the time is coming when men will worship our Father neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem. God is spirit, and they that worship Him then shall worship Him in spirit and in truth. The Father seeks to have such to worship Him.”

We have only the briefest note of the remainder of the conversation. The writer of the Fourth Gospel represents the woman as saying, after a further dialogue perhaps, that the Messiah would sometime appear, when He would explain everything. He also states that Jesus revealed to the woman that He Himself was the Messiah. Though Jesus himself was conscious of this fact, such a revelation, as we shall see, could have come only very late in the life of Jesus, when He had prepared His friends to receive it, and He could have said this to the woman only after an explanation of Himself and of her relation to the Father to which she yielded in the most honest and complete surrender. The incident leads, in John’s Gospel, to the going of Jesus to the village and remaining there with the Samaritan inhabitants for two days.

The explanation which Jesus gave His friends when they returned shows the purpose of relating this dialogue. They did not dare to reproach Him aloud for talking with the woman, but they looked their feelings.

“Rabbi, have something to eat,” said one of them coldly.

“I have had meat that you do not know about.”

“Has anybody brought him some meat?” one asked stupidly.

It was early spring. Jesus pointed across the open meadow, along which the woman was departing with her water pot on her head.

"You say it is winter, and that it will be four months before harvest. Look, I tell you; the fields are already white for harvest."

And as they saw the woman and the distant village and understood His enigma, He continued,

"You speak of meat? It is meat to me to do the Father's will, and to accomplish His work."

And this was the chief method by which He did it.

The evangelists suggest many other occasions where Jesus was no doubt as masterfully efficient in studying a human need and meeting it with tact and patience and wisdom. They tell us of His going to a wedding, they show Him walking with a few men on the Sabbath through the grain, the Fourth Gospel places Him on a housetop in solitary converse with a ruler of the Jews.

THE PENITENT.

There is another conversation, given only in Luke's Gospel, the time of the occurrence of which is not given, which illustrates further the tact of Jesus in dealing with a sinful person and His courage in meeting, at the same time, the criticism of one who boasted himself of his own goodness.

He had been invited to dinner by a Pharisee in a place that is not named.

The Pharisee had invited Jesus, not so much to be his guest as to be the object of his criticisms, and to exhibit Him to his friends. Jesus was being scrutinized by the Pharisaic party, and in a sense He was on trial this day.

The dining room was full not only of guests, but also of others who, according to the curious custom of the times, gathered along the wall to watch the diners. Among them had come a woman who had been living a sinful life. Whether she was there, in harmony with a lately introduced Roman custom, to anoint the hair and feet of all the guests as they reclined on the long couches, we do not know, nor whether she had been sent in by the Pharisee who was giving the feast or had come on her own accord. Her coming brought Jesus into a dilemma. "If Jesus is a real prophet," no doubt thought Simon the Pharisee, "He will know what kind of a person she is, and He will not allow her to touch Him. If He does allow her, we shall discount His claims as a prophet."

But when she came to Jesus and knelt beside Him, Jesus did not repulse her, and, as she performed her gracious task, He could feel her tears falling silently upon His feet. He did not

speak to her, even in kindness, for to have done so would have exposed her to ridicule. What followed next is one of the most exquisite instances of tact in history.

"Simon," said Jesus quietly from His place near the foot of the table, "I would like to speak to you."

"Yes, Rabbi," said the Pharisee condescendingly.

"Once upon a time two men were in debt to a money lender. One owed one hundred dollars, the other ten dollars. Neither of them could pay him his debt. The lender of money freely forgave them both. I would like to ask you, which of them, do you suppose, would feel the greater love for the money lender?"

"Why," said Simon at once, "of course the one to whom he forgave the much greater debt."

"Precisely," answered Jesus.

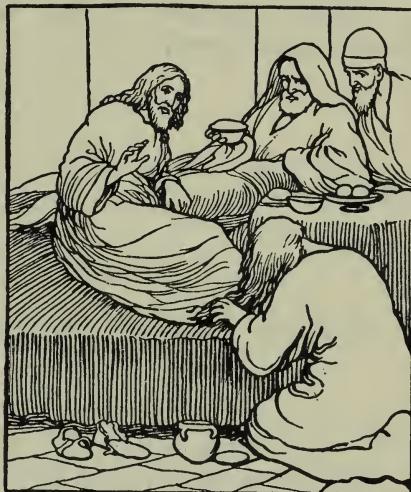
Then for the first time He turned toward the woman, and without pointing her out He continued:

"There is a woman here. When I came into your house, you did not give me any water for my feet, but she wet them—with her tears, and dried them with her hair. No kiss of greeting did you give me, but she, since I sat here, has not ceased to kiss my feet. You did not sprinkle even my head with oil, but she has covered my feet with perfume. And," He said, smiling down into the woman's face, "you may see that she is greatly forgiven, because she greatly loves."

As she went out, Jesus spoke to her directly for the first time, saying clearly, "My blessing go with you."

Then He turned sternly to His host, as He Himself went away: "Those who have little forgiven them, love but little."

Two deep impressions are ours after reading this conversation: the wonderful insight of Jesus in taking the only good quality which the poor woman seemed to have, her capacity for love, and making that the means of leading her to a better life, and the passionateness of such love which Jesus inspired in the hearts of the wretched persons who trusted Him. This unfailling ability to discern at once whatever good qualities were possessed by those who met Jesus characterized all His work.



THE WOMAN ANOINTING JESUS' FEET.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

In what part of His native country did Jesus begin His work?

What are some of the values of personal conversation as a help to goodness?

How did Jesus show tact in approaching the Samaritan woman?

How did He show patience?

What was He trying to get her to understand?

Do you think He succeeded?

Why do you think so?

What was He trying to get His disciples to understand?

What was the attitude of the Pharisee toward Jesus when he invited Him to dinner?

What was his criticism of Jesus when the woman started to anoint Jesus' feet?

Just how did Jesus meet this criticism?

What did He say about the woman?

What did He say to the woman?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Look up the word "Samaritans" in the Bible dictionary and tell what you can about these people.

Find three ways in which Jesus showed His tact by taking the Samaritan woman's standpoint.

CHAPTER IX.

HIS EARLY COMRADES.

John's friends become Jesus' friends: John 1: 35-42.

They decide to follow Him: Mark 1: 16-32; Luke 5: 1-11.

He calls others: John 1: 43-51; 2: 1, 2.

He makes His home near theirs: Matt. 4: 13-16.

"Follow me"—Mark 1: 17.

"Jesus calls us, o'er the tumult
Of our life's wild, restless sea;
Day by day His sweet voice soundeth,
Saying, Christian, follow Me."

"As of old Saint Andrew heard it,
 By the Galilean lake,
 Leaving home and friends and kindred,
 Leaving all for His dear sake."—*C. F. Alexander.*

THE FIRST SUMMONS OF JESUS.

The writer of the Fourth Gospel tells us that a few of the men who had believed in John the Baptist turned to Jesus as their leader after his imprisonment. He names especially Peter and Andrew, two brothers, who were fishermen in the town of Capernaum, a city beside the Lake of Galilee about twenty miles northeast of Nazareth. Jesus may have known these men before, as it is possible that He had already moved His own home to that place.



From a photograph copyright by Wm. H. Rau, Phila.
FISHERMEN ON THE SEA OF GALILEE.

There seems to have been an opportunity given them by Jesus to realize that He was going to take up the work of John in the province of Galilee, and probably He gave them some time in their homes to consider whether they would give up their business and spend their lives with Him. It was not a call to sacrifice, but to

spend their time in something better. "You have been good fishermen," Jesus said. "Now come and be better ones; come and catch men alive." He also called two other fishermen from the same village. He seems to have invited them two by two, so that they would be companions for each other.

JESUS MEETS THEM HALFWAY.

Perhaps some months before this time, perhaps at this time, Jesus showed that He wished to make the fishermen His partners in a very real fashion, by moving down from Nazareth and establishing His home for the rest of His life in their own city of Capernaum. It was as if He would say: "I will not ask you to come up where I am, among strangers, but I will come down where you are. We will go to work to meet the needs of your own city, which you know so well. You shall help show me

what those needs are, and together we will try to meet them." There were other reasons why Jesus decided to move from



THE SHORE AT KHAN MINYEH.

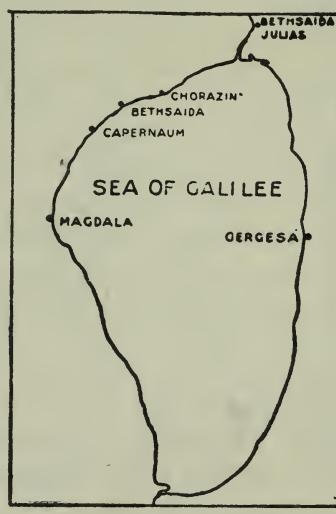
Cuts from "Leeper photographs," copyright, 1902. (Courtesy of Hammond Publishing Co., Milwaukee.)

Many suppose that Capernaum was situated at the modern Tell Hum, about two miles west of the Jordan river. Others locate it at Khan Minyeh, two and a half miles further west. The balance of opinion favors the latter site.

Nazareth. Nazareth was not on any main thoroughfare. It had little intercourse with strangers and little interchange of thought. It was not central to a large population. The people there were too much accustomed to Him to appreciate Him.

Capernaum was a considerable city, on the northwest shore of the beautiful heart-shaped lake of Galilee, whose white walls were reflected in its limpid water. The lake lay deep among yellow hills,—a sapphire sea in a cup of gold. The city stood on a tongue of land along a shining beach. Its gardens, its trees and its flowers were famous. The little lake on which it fronted was five hundred feet below the level of the sea, and it had a hot and fertile climate. There were other active towns along its shore, in the largest of which stood the palace of their governor, Herod the tetrarch.

You can hardly imagine John the Baptist living in this kind of town. He had called people away from their homes into a



SEA OF GALILEE.

lonely place and demanded that they listen to his stern message. Jesus went down into the heart of the city where multitudes lived, and began to live such a life and to say such helpful words that people were won to Him. Is it not startling when we remember all that Jesus was, to think of real people having Him as their neighbor? It is probable that He was known at first simply as "The young carpenter, who has come down from Nazareth to live among us."

WHY DID THEY FOLLOW JESUS?

Why do you think these four fishermen were willing to break off their work and live another life with Jesus? They must have known very little about Him up to this time, because we find later how poorly they understood Him. They must have been men of vigorous and independent thought, for they had gone far out of their way in order to hear John, and perhaps had already expressed a willingness to give up their fishing in order to be helpful to him. They were the kind of men who were willing to do hard things for the cause in which they believed. The tradition is that they were young men with the fresh enthusiasm of their years. We are certain, too, that they must have shared the expectations of their own people as to a coming deliverance, and these expectations must have been quickened by what they had heard John say, but the fact that they were willing to turn to Jesus shows that His person had already impressed them very deeply. What do you suppose there was about Jesus which could win such strong men as these? From our knowledge of His conversation with the woman at the well we can imagine how tactful and winsome He must have been to everybody. But if these disciples, as we know from John's Gospel, were dismayed to find Him talking with the woman, especially a woman of such a race and of such a character, when they decided to stand by Jesus they must have determined that, in spite of things they did not like or could not understand, He was the one leader in the world for them.

THEY LIKED HIM.

Perhaps the most important thing for us to realize is that Peter and Andrew began to follow Jesus because they liked Him. We are not to think of them as two theological students starting to study with a minister. We must think of them as



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

FISHERMEN BY THE SEA OF GALILEE.

two fishermen who had taken a great fancy to a carpenter. Their friendship began as our friendships do. The account in Luke describes a kindness that Jesus did them when they were at their daily work. The first place to which John's Gospel mentions Jesus as taking His new-found friends is to a wedding. The men who first followed Jesus did give up all, but they themselves never counted that. They believed from the very beginning that to be with Him was worth more to them than their daily work and income. They remind one of a veteran home missionary who had undergone many hardships. Some one was condoling with him for his many "sacrifices." "Sacrifices?" said he, "I never made but one, and that was the choice that I would be a missionary!"

THEY REVERED HIM.

This was the first attraction. But there was another one that was deeper. These young men, wholesome and natural, were also deeply religious. The Jews are a serious-minded people, and these fishermen discovered beneath the winsomeness of Jesus a great reverence of soul. The baptism of Jesus, we are sure, had been the crisis of His life. He was never in rebellion against God. The awakening of His boyhood in the temple had been followed by quiet and manly years of service. But just as truly as He had felt Himself called to care for His mother and His brothers and sisters until they no longer needed all His time, so the years had taught Him there was a wider work for Him to do. To Him the world appeared as a larger family, in which God was the Father of all. To this world family He would fain go as a brother. So when He enlisted in the movement of John, as a step toward the discovery of His special mission, it is not strange that "the Daughter of the Voice of God," as the Jews named any revelation from above, seemed to whisper as the motto of His life that phrase from an ancient Psalm: "Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee." From that day He had felt Himself peculiarly the Son of the Father, for man's service. It is possible that He did not yet know all that this should mean to Him, but such a sense of having been chosen by the most high God must have made His face sweet and strong, as if a king should tell his son that he has made him viceroy, for the good of his subjects. All of us have the privilege of such a commissioning. Paul felt it, when he burst forth once in the splendid phrase: "We are

ambassadors of God." What power and influence it gives to one to be thus made the instrument of the Eternal!

The sensitive hearts of these good Galileans responded instantly to the influence of such a life.

THE FUTURE OF THE FISHERMEN.

These four men eventually seem to have become the most effective friends whom Jesus had. They were closest to Him throughout His life. They best understood Him, and we have a little more definite knowledge concerning their future than regarding any other of the companions of Jesus.

Peter, as we shall see, was not only the leader of the band of men whom Jesus called to surround Him during His life-time,

but he was their natural leader after Jesus's departure. It was he who first gave up his Jewish prejudices and granted that Romans might share the life which Jesus proclaimed. The tradition has come down that it was in the city of Rome that he completed his ministry as the leader of the early church there, being crucified head downward, upon the spot where now stands the greatest church in Christendom.

John, it is believed, died a natural death, after a long and useful ministry in the great

city of Ephesus in Asia Minor.

James, his elder brother, was not permitted to express his loyalty through years of toil and suffering, but fell the first victim of the Twelve in the persecution under Herod Agrippa.

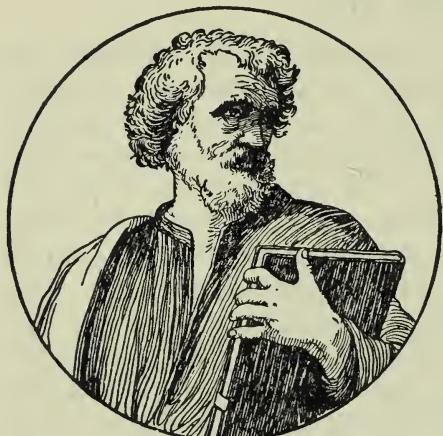
Of Andrew's later days we know nothing, but an early story is that he perished upon a cross of the shape which is now known as "St. Andrew's Cross," in his mission field in Greece.

Such were the heroic destinies of the stalwart men whom Jesus made His first friends.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Why did Jesus begin to teach in Galilee?



ST. PETER.
By Fra Bartolommeo.

What invitation did He give to Peter and Andrew?

How did Jesus show His willingness to become their comrade?

Why were these fishermen willing to become followers of Jesus?

What was Peter's later history?

What became of James?

What of John?

What do we know about Andrew?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Find the traditions about the later history of Peter in a Bible dictionary. Inquire from some Roman Catholic friend what is the Roman theory as to the relation of Peter to the Christian church.

Ask your pastor or your parents to tell you the story of the legend of "Quo Vadis," or find it yourself.

WORK FOR ALL.

Write a short imaginary letter from Peter to his wife in Capernaum, describing his impressions of Jesus and announcing the reasons which make him think that he will give up being a fisherman to follow Him.

CHAPTER X.

HOW JESUS LIVED IN HIS NEW HOME.

His days: Mark 2:13; 3:19, 20; Luke 5:1-3; Matt. 9:1.

His Sabbaths: Mark 1:21-31; 2:23-38; 3:1-6.

A Sabbath evening: Mark 1:32-34.

His nights: Mark 1:35-38.

The hospitality of His home: Mark 2:1-12.

His neighbors: Mark 2:14-16; Matt. 8:5-13; Mark 5:25-34.

The spirit of His mission: Mark 2:17-22.

His work in the neighborhood: Matt. 4:23-25; 12:15-21.

“He came into His own city.”—Matt. 9:1.

“These two His blessedness complete—
A home and a horizon.”

—Lucy Larcom.

JESUS' NEW HOME.

It was a great change for Jesus when He came to live in Capernaum. Nazareth was an austere town, a stony village of vine dressers, farmers and shepherds. Capernaum was opulent in scenery as well as in prosperity. It was built, we believe, upon the shore of the Lake of Galilee, with a sandy beach on its eastern side and the great plain of Gennesaret, filled with other lively towns, stretching to the south-west. It was itself near the end of a valley that came down from the north and only a little way from the entrance of the Jordan into the lake. Down this valley came the great highroad from Damascus, which extended on, by way of Jerusalem or by way of the Mediterranean coast, to Egypt.

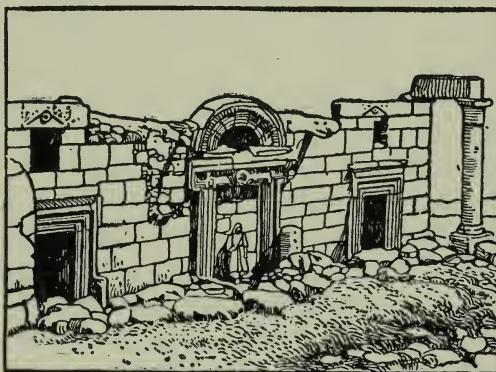
ITS CLIMATE.

The location of the city, nearly seven hundred feet below the sea level, made it a hot basin, in which vegetation was tropical. Where now are scrubby bushes were once great woods, and instead of the occasional palms and oleanders of the present

were graceful groups of trees and many fragrant gardens. The blue lake in front of the town made a beautiful contrast with the greenery of the shores, and the sudden winds which swept down upon the lake from the chilly mountains at the north brought frequent exhibitions of nature's grandeur, in thunder storms, beating rains and gorgeous sunsets.

THE ARRANGEMENT OF THE CITY.

Although the very site of Capernaum is still so much in doubt that scholars are divided upon two meadows, with scant ruins, two miles apart, we can almost construct the town plan. There was no doubt a main street, narrow as all Oriental streets are, which was parallel to or even ran along the beach. There was an open square by the city spring, which was the town centre. Very likely the city was enclosed by a low wall and near the city gate was the office of Matthew, the tax collector. Along the main street, which, as we have said, perhaps faced the lake, were little shops, the fronts of homes, with all their wares displayed in their shallow niches. Still narrower lanes reached back from the water, along which were the bare, unbroken fronts of the houses, and in some secluded lane stood the synagogue, a square, stone building, with no ornament except a pot of manna carved over the doorway.



RUINS OF A SYNAGOGUE IN GALILEE.

THE LIFE OF CAPERNAUM.

The city was full of noise, crowds and color. Every morning the beach thronged with fishermen, just in from a night on the deep, with their families, mending their nets and selling their fish. Around the spring was a continually passing file of women with water pots. Along the main street stalked lordly camels, laden with bright bales, and accompanied by men who spoke many languages. At market and feast times these passers were increased by village processions and groups of foreign Jews coming home and hastening to perform their religious duties. These strangers sometimes halted at the

modest city taverns or even attended the synagogue if overtaken by the Sabbath. The nearness of Herod's capital, the new city of Tiberias, eight miles south, as well as the accessibility of Capernaum, brought some foreigners to live in the city, and there were always a hundred Roman soldiers or so in the city barracks.

One can see that the life of Capernaum was a more liberal one than that of Nazareth. There was the gradual absorption of foreign ways and the necessary tolerance of alien ideas. Capernaum was also less dominated by the Pharisees than was Jerusalem, the capital, for while the few who belonged to that school who lived in the city were no doubt influential by wealth and position, yet the Galileans, especially those in the large towns, shared an independence of thought which had been characteristic ever since the Ten Tribes separated from Judea. Especially in patriotism were the Capernaum people more brave than the Jerusalemites, for they had neither been cowed by constant display of armies nor wooed to compliance by the profitableness of catering to their conquerors. Capernaum was, like the rest of Galilee, governed by an independent ruler, Herod Antipas, who had a title only less than that of king, and whose control was characterized by cunning and tactfulness. This had, however, not prevented the home-loving Galileans from contempt of the man who had stolen away his brother's wife, and the preaching of John the Baptist had no doubt fomented an unrest which made the Galileans ready for an opportunity for revolt against one, who, though Idumean and Samaritan in blood, was Roman in morals and ideals.

To this city, a business centre rather than a centre of culture, a town of mixed population, a fevered, turbulent community, Jesus came for His manhood's home, making it, as the Gospels affectionately say, "his own city," and thus sharing the life not only of His personal friends but of this city and of the others which constituted the heart of His chosen province.

WHERE JESUS LIVED.

We may perhaps believe that Jesus lived in Capernaum longer than some chronological tables that have been made allow, for the deep influence of Jesus in the community and upon those who attended Him suggests the need of time for men to know Him, to become attached to Him and to absorb His message.

The earliest Gospel tells us that Jesus made at least His

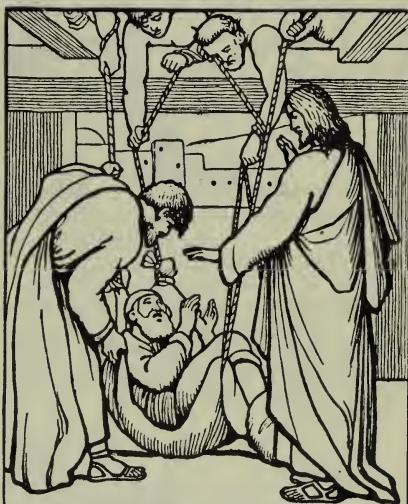


Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

IN THE COURT OF A VILLAGE HOME, CANA OF GALILEE.

temporary home when He first came to Capernaum with Simon Peter. Peter was married and perhaps had children, and there was also his wife's mother and probably his brother Andrew in the family. With the eastern ideas of liberal hospitality, we may be sure that Jesus shared the best such a home had to give, but it adds to the sympathy which the many to-day who live in boarding houses must feel for Jesus that He knew for some time what it is to lack privacy and to miss the sanctity that comes from having a home of one's own.

There is an interesting and almost amusing story in the Gospel of Mark, in the second chapter, to show how people invaded His home life. He had been away for a little while, and when He came back the neighbors filled the house to such an extent that nobody else could get in. A helpless man was brought by four of his friends on a cot. They were so anxious to bring him to the attention of Jesus that when they found they could not enter by the door, they did not wait for the meeting to break up, but they climbed up the outside stairway and tore open the flat roof, which, as we know, was made of rows of long poles covered with mortar or mud. Jesus could easily mend this Himself, because that was His trade, but the story shows how sure His neighbors felt of His good will and willingness to be of service.



THE MAN LET DOWN THROUGH THE ROOF.

JESUS' NEIGHBORS.

A glimpse or two is given us of some of Jesus' neighbors. Two of them are mentioned because they were two whom most people would not have made their friends. One of them was the captain of the Roman garrison. This cultured and broad-minded officer had become so friendly to the Jewish faith that he had actually furnished the money to build them their synagogue. A very beautiful story is told, representing this nobleman as receiving Jesus with the very greatest honor, and Jesus in return speaking words of praise of him, which He had not

been able to speak of any of His own countrymen. Another friend whom He made was the customs collector, Levi, or Matthew.



Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.

THE CALL OF MATTHEW.

barrassing socially to one who expected to keep the good will of His neighbors, who had long ago ostracized Levi, but Jesus met it bravely by cordially accepting the invitation.

JESUS' DAILY LIFE.

Let us not make too much of a break between the life of Jesus at Nazareth and at Capernaum. If He was a plain man in Nazareth, occasionally taking part modestly in the synagogue service and expressing Himself chiefly through personal conversation and friendships, let us think that this was the way He began to live at Capernaum. We are not to think of Him as a city "preacher," for while He was allowed to speak in the house of worship, there were two recognized classes of speakers, the authorized interpreters of the law, and those who made their own original comments, and Jesus was classed as one of the latter. Neither are we to think of Jesus as a "pastor," going around making calls. To mingle thus freely with women in their homes was unknown in Jesus' day. Liberal as the Capernaum people were, the fact that Jesus never fasted (and perhaps never offered sacrifice) and that He took long walks in the fields and engaged in deeds of helpfulness on Sabbath days prevented His being regarded as in any sense the recognized religious head of the community. Another habit

which prevented, if nothing else did, His being hailed as the chief rabbi of Capernaum was His attitude toward men and women of doubtful character. A rabbi thought the best way to show hatred for sin was to show contempt for a sinner, so no rabbi ever spoke to a man or a woman of ill fame. Jesus, on the contrary, took special pains to help such folk to change their way of living and He aroused criticism by doing so.

He was at first simply a new-comer, who gradually made close friends, who came where the citizens gathered and made one of the conversing group, who sometimes spoke in the synagogue. Evenings and the Sabbath were the only moments of leisure for men in this workingman's city, and almost all the incidents related of Jesus' doings in Capernaum occurred at those times. Could He have taught at times in the public school? If finally people loved to listen to Him so much that they thronged Him until He had to climb upon a boat seat by the beach, if as a good citizen His part in relieving the suffering of the sick in the city brought crowds to His house door at night, if the hands whose nails were broken with toil and the voice that had so often been heard in friendly greeting were used to hasten the recovery of His little neighbor, the daughter of Jairus, it simply means that He had become a wellspring of blessing to Capernaum, but without a title of honor, just the first citizen of His city. The Gospel according to Mark pictures Him as a man of tireless energy and of eager earnestness. It throbs with the frequent word "straightway," as if Jesus were constant in friendly service and instant in efficient aid. Is it not helpful to think that Jesus Himself was the first Christian, and that His life in the town that was His home was an ideal for a good friend, a good neighbor, a good citizen now?

JESUS IN HIS OWN HOME.

Another difficulty which Jesus had to meet was lack of sympathy on the part of His own relatives. Their opposition



JAIRUS' DAUGHTER.

to His manner of life grew rather than lessened. One authority (Edersheim) supposes that Jesus knew in His own home circle the influence of three of the purest but most bigoted Jewish tendencies: "the earnestness of the Shammaites represented in James, the buoyancy of the Messianic watchers, represented in Jude, and the fervor of the nationalistic idea, represented in Simon the Zealot," whom he thinks to have been a cousin of Jesus. What would men like these have thought of Jesus' alliance with John the Baptist? Must they not have watched with concern the development of new ideas in His mind when He was yet a young man at home with them or coming and going as an itinerant artisan? At first they thought He was singular, and finally they made up their minds that He was insane. We cannot even separate His mother, as she is represented in the Gospel story, from the rest of His relatives in this respect. On one occasion she and Jesus' brothers seem to have made an effort to take Jesus by force and compel Him to desist from His chosen career.

Another difficulty was the lack of quiet. The life of a tropical town is lived largely in the open air, and the moment one steps out of doors one is in the midst of a crowd. But soon Jesus' home began to be invaded. On days when the synagogue was closed those who wished to talk with Him and listen to Him seem to have used His home as an assembly place, and it is not hard to imagine how, on a winter evening, when He and Peter had sat down before the open fire to talk, there would come the patter of sandals on the flagging outside, and when the door was opened by Jesus there would be the flash of lanterns in the dark lane outside and the news of some sickness or sorrow for whose relief Jesus was wanted.

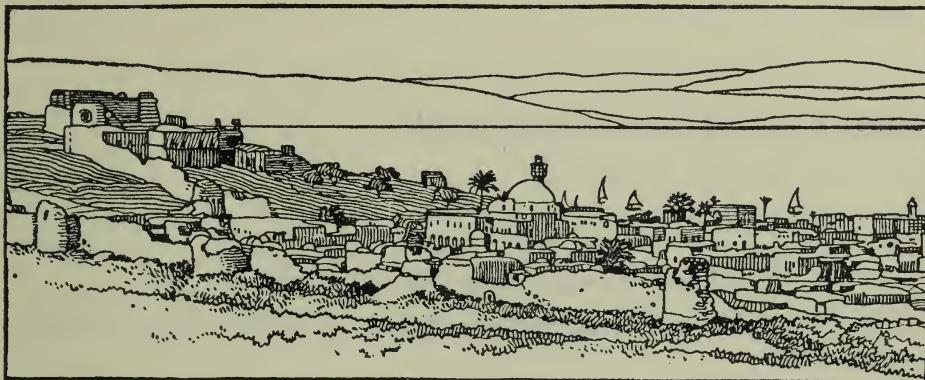
It must have been hard, with the problem of self-support and the constant pressure of the throng and the interruptions to His rest, for Him to get any time to Himself. Yet He would not let the spiritual get crowded out, and so we are not surprised to hear Mark tell us of nights when He tried to find a solitary place where He could pray and think.

JESUS' HORIZON.

While Jesus was thus being taught by doing, He was not forgetful of the larger life which He was preparing to live. Even when His comrades in Capernaum exultantly told Him, "Everybody is seeking you," He assured them that He intended

to lead them out from Capernaum to spread His movement of brotherhood and mercy throughout their entire native province. He gave His best to His neighbors in Capernaum, but every day He did so He looked forward to the time when this strength which He gained as He gave should be shared by many. This vision was Jesus' horizon.

Already people who had visited Capernaum had gone back to tell their friends about Jesus. People from other places began to come to Him, and it was plain that Capernaum could not hold Him much longer. When He did go forth to the larger



TIBERIAS.

A modern town on the Sea of Galilee.

world, to serve it, it was of great help, not only to His reputation, but also to His mission, that He had for years been a working artisan, a neighbor, a citizen, a man with a record and with a broad human experience.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

By comparing chapter I with this chapter, make at least three contrasts between Nazareth and Capernaum.

Describe a morning in Capernaum.

In what ways was the thought of Capernaum more liberal than that of Jerusalem?

Describe the beginning of Jesus' ministry in Capernaum.

Tell the story of two of Jesus' neighbors.

What was the attitude of Jesus' brothers toward Him?

How was Jesus often interrupted?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Give verbally an imaginary dialogue between two of Jesus' household.

Write down three complaints which Jesus' brother James may have made concerning His conduct.

WORK FOR ALL.

Draw an imaginary plan, based upon the description of this chapter, of the city of Capernaum.

CHAPTER XI.

THE MEN WHO TOLD US ABOUT JESUS.

The choosing of the Twelve: Mark 3: 13-19.

The purpose of the Gospel according to Mark: Acts 10: 38.

The purpose of the Gospel according to Matthew: Matt. 4: 17; 16: 21.

The purpose of the Gospel according to Luke: Luke 1: 1-4.

The purpose of the Gospel according to John: John 20: 31.

“The best life of Christ is the life of a Christian.”

—Phillips Brooks.

JESUS' ACQUAINTANCE WITH THE TWELVE.

We get the impression from the Gospels that Jesus gradually made friends for Himself, very much in the way in which we do. Some of our new comrades are introduced to us by old friends. So Jesus received His first two intimate companions, Peter and Andrew, from John the Baptist. We often find our friends in our daily work. Jesus, the carpenter, came down to Capernaum to live, and there He came to know more intimately some of the fishermen. We find some of our friends in the business world. Jesus saw Levi, the tax collector, frequently at the town gate, and there formed his acquaintance.

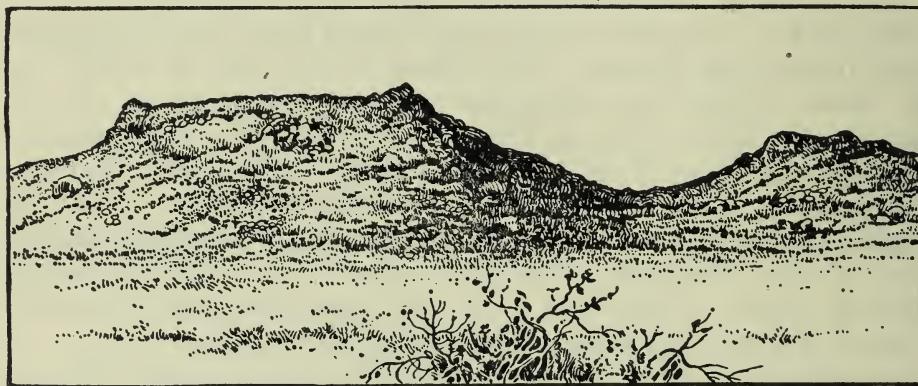
Jesus finally singled out some men who accompanied Him in all of His ministry, who were known by the special title of “Apostles.” The word “Apostle” means one who is not only a messenger but a delegate, bearing a commission. It is somewhat like the term ambassador. “An Apostle,” says the Talmud, “is as the man himself by whom he is deputed.” They were twelve in number, the same number as that of the tribes of Israel, and thus emblematic of a national movement.

How THEY WERE CHOSEN.

We do not know very much about the character and history of the Apostles of Jesus. Some very interesting facts appear, however, as to His method in choosing them. The twelve, who are mentioned, were always named in sets of four. They seem also to be named in pairs. Though the order of names differs in the four lists, Peter is always at the head of the first four, Philip of Bethsaida of the second, and James the Little, of the third. There seem to have been either two or three sets of brothers, and it is believed that two, and possibly four, of the

twelve were relatives of Jesus. Apparently all but one of them came from Galilee, and perhaps all but two from Capernaum. At least four of them were fishermen. All this indicates that Jesus' desire was to bring together a body of men, bound together by every possible human tie of neighborhood, kinship, habit of life and religious feeling. They were to be a family of brothers. That Jesus believed men could work together who did not always think alike seems to be shown by the fact that He called both Matthew and Simon the Zealot,—the one a tax gatherer and the other a hater of taxes.

The choice of Judas Iscariot has always been a mystery. It seems incredible that Jesus would have deliberately selected



From "Leeper photographs," copyright, 1902.

KURN HATTIN, OR THE HORNS OF HATTIN.

The traditional place of the choosing of the Twelve and the Sermon on the Mount.

a thief and a traitor. We are rather led to suppose that He chose as His only disciple from Judea a man of undecided possibilities of good and of evil, who, even in the light of Jesus' presence and confidence, chose the darkness and at length betrayed Him.

WHAT THE TWELVE DID.

It is not necessary to suppose that all of the Twelve immediately and at the same time gave up their daily vocations. Probably the first thing Jesus asked of each of these men as a friend was some trifling deed of service. We find Him on one occasion borrowing Peter's boat, and on another sending some of the disciples after the boat, and again asking two of His friends to go on an errand. In the story of the dinner by the lake we get the impression that they looked after the stock of

food, and we know that Judas was the treasurer of their small hoard of money.

Very pleasant pictures come to us of the first days of Jesus' new-found friends with their leader. Whether or not they knew it, it was His intention that they should go to school to Him. They were to be with Him until they caught His spirit, and understood and could interpret to others His message. We see them, therefore, seated with the congregation in the synagogue at Capernaum, walking again some Sabbath afternoon in the corn-fields, ushering the crowd which gathered on the hillside or at the cross-roads, and hovering about Him as He performed His deeds of mercy.

THE TWELVE WERE NOT WRITERS.

We have been in the habit of thinking of the Twelve as chosen by Jesus partly for the sake of handing down to men who should follow a knowledge of the life and teachings of Jesus. Strange to say, it is only indirectly that we obtain what we know about Jesus from the Twelve. It is not certain that we have any book from the pen of any of the Apostles, although they may have influenced the writing of each of the four Gospels. It will be interesting to learn at this point just who took the place of the disciples in conveying the life of Jesus to those who have lived since His day.

When the early church came into being, a group of men gathered within it who were equally as able and serviceable as most of the Twelve. Among them was Stephen, the first Christian martyr, the great-hearted Barnabas, James, the brother of Jesus, who became the head of all the Jerusalem Christians, and Paul, the greatest personality, no doubt, that the Christian church has ever known. Of these we have writings only from Paul. Apparently none of these attempted to write a life of Jesus.

HOW THE GOSPELS CAME TO BE WRITTEN.

The written accounts of Jesus' life seem to have come into being as follows: First the disciples and friends of Jesus gave their reminiscences orally. As they grew old and some died, the early Christians began to crave permanent records of their great Master. Brief accounts of His deeds and teachings probably began to be written within twenty years of His death.

These early writers, however, were not so much interested in the details of Jesus' career as a whole, as in the story of His death and resurrection. They were intensely interested in this story because on it were based the two beliefs which they held most precious, that "Christ died for our sins," and "Was raised for our justification."

So it came to pass that, during the only years when anyone was capable of writing a biography of Jesus which should tell in fullness and order of both His private and public life, the Christian world desired rather books that should be arguments for the special truths that were of comfort to themselves. Accordingly many of the things we are most anxious to know can never be told us.

THE FOUR GOSPELS.

The first mention of Jesus in the world's literature is in the letters of Paul, and while he gives a vivid account of the Lord's Supper, he does not mention a single fact regarding Jesus which is not told us in the Gospels.

Not much more than thirty-five years after the death of Jesus a book was written which we call "The Gospel according to Mark," the earliest and most valuable book about Jesus in the world's possession. Mark became, as we know, a companion of Peter, but he probably had never seen Jesus more than two or three times, and then during the last week of His life. This is on the supposition that he was the young man whose mother owned the house in which was the upper room where Jesus kept the Passover with His friends.

The books which now bear the names of "Matthew" and "Luke" were evidently put together by men who were familiar with the writings of Mark. They both also used other exceedingly valuable writings, now lost, which seem to have consisted chiefly of selections from Jesus' teachings, with a few additional facts about His life. An early Christian writer states that the Apostle Matthew made such a collection of Jesus' teachings. These are probably quoted in our present Gospels of Matthew and Luke. The writers or compilers of these two books apparently were not personally acquainted with Jesus. The Gospel which bears the name and influence of "John" was written at least thirty years after Mark and its writer evidently had access to all the other three. None of the four

was endeavoring to write a biography, in our modern sense of the word.

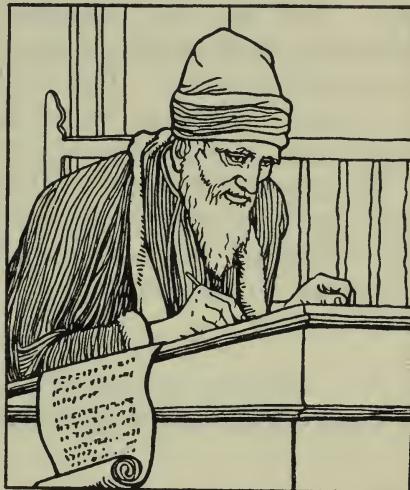
The Gospel according to Mark, which probably represents much of the influence of Peter, describes a heroic reformer by giving eight dramatic scenes from His life. The Gospel according to Matthew is what is called in college a "thesis," a book written to prove that Jesus was the great Deliverer whom the Jews were expecting and also the Deliverer of all who will follow Him. The book which bears the name of "Luke" was probably by the physician companion of Paul. Though written by one who had not seen Jesus, it is a painstaking effort to tell a cultured friend about this gracious Representative from the Father.

The remarkable book which bears the name of "John" is not a biography at all, but is a sermon upon the Incarnation, illustrated by a group of seven selected miracles and an account of the Passion, and containing an interpretation of Jesus' teachings. The book was probably written by a devout Christian philosopher, near the end of the first century. Many scholars accept the tradition that this philosopher was none other than the Apostle John, who lived to a great age at Ephesus which was a centre of Greek philosophy.

THE VALUE OF THE GOSPELS.

Interesting though exact personal knowledge about Jesus would be, we do not need it in order to understand His spirit and to be His followers. It is still possible to reach behind the records which were made for a special need of second century Christians to the universal truths which Jesus taught and to the meaning of the life which Jesus lived.

No books could possibly be of greater value than the four Gospels. It is true that the writers were more interested in Jesus' death and resurrection than in His life. It is true that most of them, perhaps all, did not have a first-hand acquaint-



Copyrighted, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.
MARK.

ance with the person of Jesus. And of course they shared the limitations as to knowledge of science, of disease and of Jesus' deepest meaning common to their time. But what a priceless heritage they present! Sincerity shines in every line. No one can compare them without finding how each different view-point gives us a new angle from which to see the wonderful life. Even with their limitations, we can hardly see how otherwise we could have come to so adequate an impression of the One whom no books can contain.

The greatest tribute to their worth is that each of them should have entirely obscured himself in order that he might throw the strongest light upon Him whom he was endeavoring to represent to the world.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Name three ways in which Jesus made friends.

What were the relationships among the Apostles one to another?

What did the Twelve do after they were chosen?

Did any of the Twelve write a biography of Jesus?

How did the Gospels come to be written?

Who made the first mention of Jesus in literature?

What information was behind the writer of the Gospel according to Mark?

What information was behind the Gospels of Matthew and Luke?

How long after Jesus was the Gospel according to John written?

How does the Fourth Gospel differ from the other three?

What is the great value of the Gospels?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Find something interesting about the Gospel according to Mark.

Read a few chapters in some short life of Jesus, suggested by your teacher, and be prepared to tell how it differs, as it seems to you, from the plan and style of the Gospel according to Mark.

Which is your own favorite Gospel, and why?

CHAPTER XII.

THE PHARISEES STUDYING JESUS.

The Pharisees studying Jesus: Mark 2: 15; 3: 1-5.

Jesus' opinion of the Pharisees: Matt. 23:1-12; Mark 2:21, 22.

WHO THE PHARISEES WERE.

Soon after Jesus begins to teach in Galilee we find that groups of Pharisees are coming frequently to study Him and His work. Who were these Pharisees?

You remember how the Old Testament closes with the ruin of the Jewish kingdom? You know how the Jews became subject successively to the Babylonians, the Persians and the Greeks, and finally, in the time of Jesus, to Rome. But their patriotism was not dead, and they were not without leaders. When they could no longer govern themselves politically, this strange, serious people became a spiritual organization. What we would call the state became a church. What we would call their national constitution was enlarged to become a text-book of religious obligation, and in place of their prophets arose a race of school-masters.

These school-masters, the intelligent patriots of the time, maintained among their countrymen a passionate and perpetual belief in one God. This belief was the one great gift which the Jewish exile gave to the world. The school-masters who taught it insisted upon the strict separation of every loyal Jew from any social or friendly relation to the idolatrous races which had conquered them. One of the names for this class whom we know as Pharisees means "The separated ones."

THE PURPOSES OF THE PHARISEES.

The word "Pharisee" has come to have such an unpleasant meaning that it is worth while for us to try to realize how noble were their purposes and how great were their claims to the nation's gratitude. You can realize this by thinking what a splendid contrast they made to the other strong parties of their time. They differed from the Herodians, who had lost all their religious earnestness and were actually allying themselves with their conquerors. They were unlike the Zealots because they trusted God so earnestly that they would not appeal to force, and rather suffered patiently, awaiting His time. They differed from the Sadducees, who were a close corporation, largely of

the priestly class. They spent their time in the synagogues in the schooling of children and in teaching Judaism to the heathen. They made the hope of a Messiah the great dream of the nation, and they had so prepared the way for Jesus that He could take this glorified nationalism and graft upon it the kingdom of God. They, unlike the Sadducees, believed in immortality, and they trained the national will to the point where Jesus could lay hold upon it.

And they had been successful. They had, as Jesus said, "sat down in the seat of Moses." Their Torah had become the accepted book of laws. Their scholars, "the Scribes of the Pharisees," as they were called, working without pay and working everywhere, had put the whole nation to school. They had put their stamp on the Judaism which was current for the next two hundred years, not only in the Holy Land, but wherever the Jews were dispersed, and when the temple was destroyed, they stood silently in front of it as its last hopeless defenders.

JESUS' APPRECIATION OF THE PHARISEES.

Jesus knew their worth better than do we. No doubt His own school-master was one of these educated scribes. To one of them He said, "Thou art not far from the Kingdom of God." (Mark 12: 34.) He acknowledged the value of the great truths and laws which they taught. But Jesus had outgrown them. Their faults had come almost to conceal their virtues. They had overlaid the simplicity of worship with ceremonials that were so burdensome that men were overwhelmed by them. The Sabbath, which had been originally designed as a joyous day of freedom and leisure, to commune with God and higher things, had become with its multiform and unreasonable restrictions the hardest and most dreaded day of the whole week. It was itself really an object of worship. They had also become so pompous that they demanded unreasonable respect for themselves, and, as is often the case with formalists, some even kept up the most elaborate observances while their own lives were selfish and rotten.

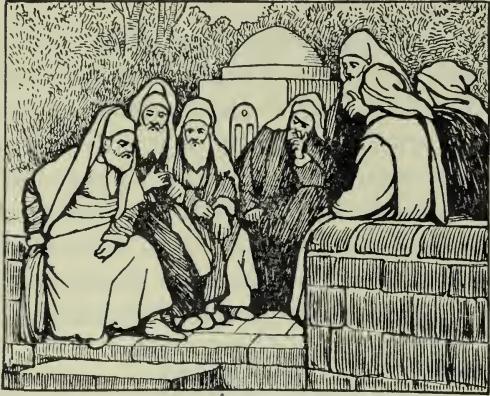
THE PHARISEES STUDYING JESUS.

As soon as these Pharisees came into contact with Jesus they began to question many of His actions. Their questions and His answers do more to throw light upon the difference between His spirit and theirs than would a volume of expla-

nations. One Sabbath they found Jesus with His disciples walking through a grain field, and the disciples were pulling off the heads of grain and eating them. This would seem to us an innocent act, entirely in harmony with the joyous, festal day, but according to their Torah it was a sinful deed, for two reasons. It was a kind of reaping and a kind of winnowing.

Jesus' sensible answer to their complaint was this: "The Sabbath belongs to man, and not man to the Sabbath." It was made for man's sake; men were not made for the Sabbath's sake.

Again they complained because He wrought deeds of healing on the Sabbath. Jesus told them in so many words that neglect to do kindness, even on that day, appeared to Him to be heathenish.


A GROUP OF PHARISEES.
(Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot. Courtesy of the McClure Tissot Co.)

They asked Him why He did not engage in the ceremonial fasts which the disciples of John the Baptist were in the habit of observing. Jesus' reply was: "Why should people fast when they are happy? These are honeymoon days. During such days do the friends of the bridegroom fast?" Indeed, Jesus seems not only to have ignored the fasts, but in principle at least He showed that it was irrational to abstain from certain meats as being ceremonially unclean, even though these were prohibited by the Mosaic law. The Gospel according to Mark tells us, "He made all meats clean."

Again they asked Him why He sat down at table with sinners. "To whom does a doctor go," asked Jesus, "to well people or to sick people?"

THE OPENING RIFT.

Many of the Pharisees were conscientious. They were not Jesus' enemies at the beginning, but it was impossible for them either to understand or to permit such infractions of what they believed to be the very constitution of their nation. They could see no safety to the nation unless it was kept close within the

bounds of habit and custom. If the Jews should act like the people of other races, they argued that they would become like them in every way, and they would no longer be a separate race, knowing God and being blessed by Him. On the other hand, Jesus, as has been said, had outgrown them. He could not be patient with the attempt to make life a program of petty details. "I am come that they might have life," He once said, "and that they might have it more abundantly." One who had entered, as Jesus had, into intimate and joyous fellowship with God, and who felt every day the abounding life of God in His own soul could not but burst, as the spring-tide bursts its barriers, these dull and petty constructions of theirs, and His full tidal life spread forth into all the shallows of other lives, helping the good seed to fertility wherever it went.



JESUS BY THE SEA.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

How did the Pharisees come to be trusted teachers of the Jews?

How did they differ from the Herodians?

From the Zealots?

From the Sadducees?

What was Jesus' opinion of the Pharisees?

How did they differ from Him regarding the Sabbath-keeping?

How regarding fasting?

How concerning the treatment of sinners?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Find in the Bible dictionary something about the great Pharisee, Gamaliel.

Try to find out something about the history of the Pharisees after the time of Jesus.

WORK FOR ALL.

Decide in the class upon a suitable wording of a resolution discussing some practical phase of the Sunday question under our modern conditions, and choose sides for an extemporaneous discussion, for this week or next.

YOUNG PEOPLE'S PROBLEMS

As Interpreted by Jesus

*A Course of Study for Classes Preparing for Church Membership
and for Christian Service*

By WILLIAM BYRON FORBUSH

The purpose of this course of study is to meet the religious problems of young people who are about sixteen years of age. The first chapter is intended to help make clear our ideas as to just what is our religion, which we call Christian. The second chapter discusses religion as personal and as consisting of discipleship of Jesus. In the next two chapters the place of the church as both a school and a field of service for young people is considered. Then come three chapters, intended to be helpful in the choice and consecration of one's calling, followed by one explaining the means and possibilities and ideals of the higher education that prepares for these callings. The remaining chapters take up several of the most important special questions of the personal religious life, following Jesus in our social living, gaining and keeping spiritual strength by communion with God, preparing the mind and heart for disappointment and sorrow, and — finally — the correlation of all these separate lessons into a unified conception of a personal life devoted to the ideals of Jesus and the task of the Kingdom of God.

This course is intended to help a serious young student of the Christian religion not only to understand what our religion means, but to desire and will to enlist intelligently and heartily in the discipleship of Jesus. It is also designed to prepare for church membership by affording a clearer conception of the Christian way, the Christian church, and the world of service. It is for young Christians, to help them to be better ones.

PAPER COVERS, 12 CENTS NET

TEACHER'S MANUAL, 15 CENTS NET

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

(RELIGIOUS LITERATURE DEPARTMENT)

597-599 FIFTH AVENUE - - NEW YORK

The Life and Teachings of Jesus

This book is issued as a part of the Completely Graded Series of the Bible Study Union (Blakeslee) Lessons for Sunday-schools and Bible classes. It is intended primarily for use by classes of "Senior" age, although it is equally well adapted for use in adult classes wishing a historical course of Bible study treated from the modern point of view. It is one of a series of textbooks to be published in six volumes, arranged as follows:

I. The Heroes and Crises of Early Hebrew History.

From the Beginnings of Human History to the Death of Moses.
(*Now Ready.*) Cloth \$1.00 net.

II. The Founders and Rulers of United Israel.

From the Death of Moses to the Division of the Hebrew Kingdom.
(*Now Ready.*) Cloth \$1.00 net.

III. The Kings and Prophets of Israel and Judah.

From the Division of the Kingdom to the Babylonian Exile.
(*Now Ready.*) Cloth \$1.00 net.

IV. The Makers and Teachers of Judaism.

From the Fall of Jerusalem to the Beginning of the Christian Era.
(*Now Ready.*) Cloth \$1.00 net.

V. The Life and Teachings of Jesus.

In the Light of the Earliest Records. (*Now Ready.*) Cloth
\$1.25 net.

VI. The Work and Teachings of the Apostles.

From the Death of Jesus to the End of the First Century. (*In
preparation.*)

*Volumes I, II, III and IV also issued in paper covers.
Per volume 60 cents (postage 5 cents).*

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
597-599 FIFTH AVENUE - - NEW YORK

268.05-

BIG

Second Quarter

The Bible Study Union Lessons

THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY

MAY 27 1918

INTERMEDIATE GRADE

SECOND QUARTER

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

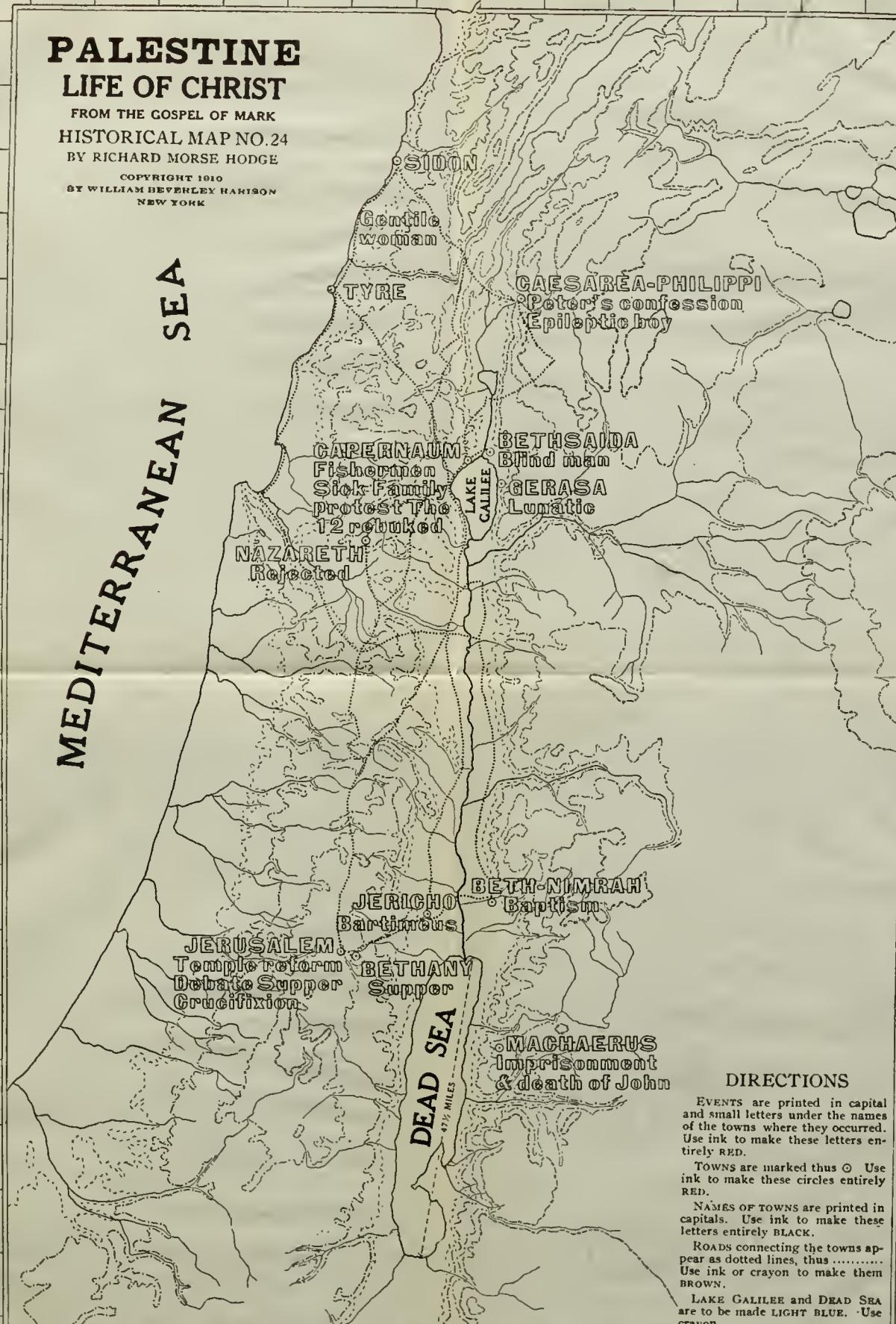
153-157 FIFTH AVENUE

NEW YORK

PALESTINE LIFE OF CHRIST

FROM THE GOSPEL OF MARK
HISTORICAL MAP NO. 24
BY RICHARD MORSE HODGE
COPYRIGHT 1910
BY WILLIAM BEVERLEY HARRISON
NEW YORK

MEDITERRANEAN SEA



DIRECTIONS

EVENTS are printed in capital and small letters under the names of the towns where they occurred. Use ink to make these letters entirely RED.

TOWNS are marked thus Use ink to make these circles entirely RED.

NAMES OF TOWNS are printed in capitals. Use ink to make these letters entirely BLACK.

ROADS connecting the towns appear as dotted lines, thus Use ink or crayon to make them BROWN.

LAKE GALILEE and DEAD SEA are to be made LIGHT BLUE. Use crayon.

MILES 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90 100 110 120 130

THE BIBLE STUDY UNION LESSONS
THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

BY

WILLIAM BYRON FORBUSH

Author of "The Boy Problem," "The Boys' Life of Christ,"
and "The Coming Generation"

CHARLES F. KENT, PH.D.
GEORGE A. COE, PH.D., LL.D. } *Consulting Editors*

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
NEW YORK

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Chapter 13. What Jesus' Teaching was Like	93
Chapter 14. Jesus' Message to His Neighbors	100
Chapter 15. Jesus' Proclamation of the Kingdom	106
Chapter 16. A Night and Day of Peril	115
Chapter 17. Back to His Old Home	121
Chapter 18. The Adventures of His Twelve Messengers	128
Chapter 19. Those who were With and Against Jesus	134
Chapter 20. The Martyrdom of a Hero	142
Chapter 21. Jesus Sharing with the Multitude	148
Chapter 22. The Break with the Pharisees	153
Chapter 23. Jesus among a Foreign People	158
Chapter 24. The Source of Jesus' Courage	167

The Bible Study Union Lessons (Completely Graded Series), Intermediate Grade:—Published quarterly by Charles Scribner's Sons, 153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York; price, 12 cents each, 48 cents a year.

LIST OF LESSONS.

(Subject to revision.)

- I. A BOY OF THE HILLS.
- II. JESUS' WORLD.
- III. JESUS' SCHOOLING.
- IV. A COUNTRY BOY'S FIRST VISIT TO THE CITY.
- V. THE VILLAGE CARPENTER.
- VI. THE MAN WHO HAD A NEW MESSAGE.
- VII. JESUS' CHOICE OF A CALLING.
- VIII. HOW JESUS WENT ABOUT HIS WORK.
- IX. HIS EARLY COMRADES.
- X. HOW JESUS LIVED IN HIS NEW HOME.
- XI. THE MEN WHO TOLD US ABOUT JESUS.
- XII. THE PHARISEES STUDY JESUS.

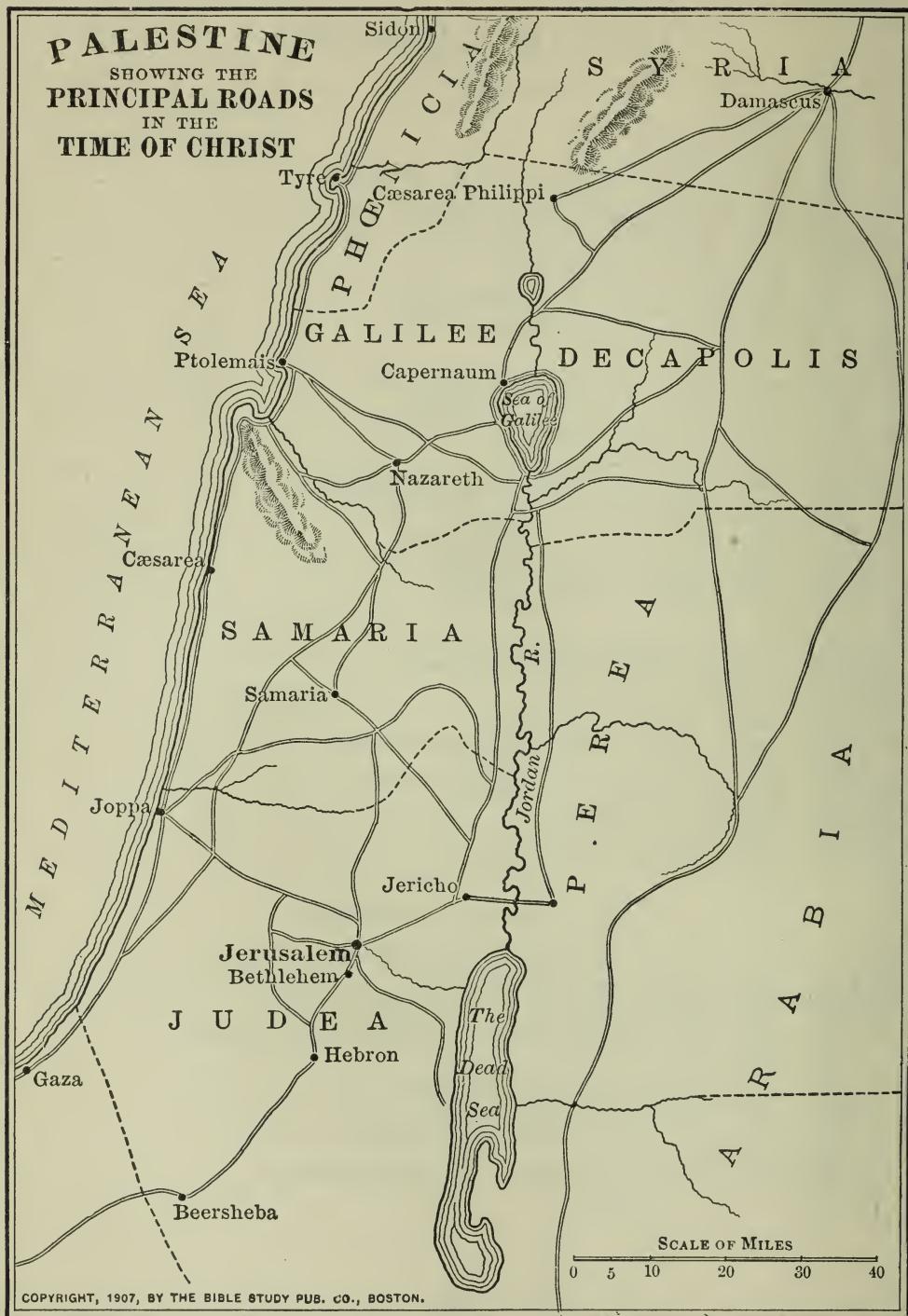
- XIII. WHAT JESUS' TEACHING WAS LIKE.
- XIV. JESUS' MESSAGE TO HIS NEIGHBORS.
- XV. JESUS' PROCLAMATION OF THE KINGDOM.
- XVI. A NIGHT AND DAY OF PERIL.
- XVII. BACK TO HIS OLD HOME.
- XVIII. THE ADVENTURES OF HIS TWELVE MESSENGERS.
- XIX. THOSE WHO WERE WITH AND AGAINST JESUS.
- XX. THE MARTYRDOM OF A HERO.
- XXI. JESUS SHARING WITH THE MULTITUDE.
- XXII. THE BREAK WITH THE PHARISEES.
- XXIII. JESUS AMONG A FOREIGN PEOPLE.
- XXIV. THE SOURCE OF JESUS' COURAGE.

- XXV. JESUS TAKING THE HARDER ROAD.
- XXVI. A PRELIMINARY VISIT TO JERUSALEM.
- XXVII. IN PEREA AND SAMARIA.
- XXVIII. GOING UP TO JERUSALEM.
- XXIX. JESUS' ARRIVAL AT JERUSALEM.
- XXX. JESUS' ATTACK UPON THE CORRUPT PRIESTS.
- XXXI. THE CONSPIRACY AGAINST JESUS.
- XXXII. JESUS' ATTITUDE IN THE FACE OF DEATH.
- XXXIII. BETRAYED, DENIED, CONDEMNED.
- XXXIV. THE DEATH OF JESUS.
- XXXV. THE CHRIST WHO ABIDES.
- XXXVI. THE RADIANCE OF THE MASTER.

YOUNG PEOPLE'S PROBLEMS

As Interpreted by Jesus.

- XXXVII. WHAT IS THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION?
- XXXVIII. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A DISCIPLE OF JESUS?
- XXXIX. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A CHURCH MEMBER?
- XL. THE SPECIAL PLACE OF YOUNG PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH.
- XLI. ONE'S CALLING.
- XLII. THE FIELDS OF CHRISTIAN SERVICE.
- XLIII. THE CHRISTIAN IDEAL OF A HOME.
- XLIV. THE PROBLEM OF GETTING READY FOR LIFE.
- XLV. FOLLOWING JESUS IN OUR WORK, SCHOOL AND PLAY.
- XLVI. THE INNER LIFE.
- XLVII. THE PROBLEM OF SORROWS AND DISAPPOINTMENTS.
- XLVIII. A LIFE OF SERVICE.



MAP NO. 4.

CHAPTER XIII.

WHAT JESUS' TEACHING WAS LIKE.

His manner of authority: Mark 1: 22.

The method of parables: Matt. 13: 34, 35.

His first story and its explanation: Mark 4: 1-20, 26-29, 30-34.

The method of dramatic representation: Mark 9: 36; Mark 11: 12-14.

Some of His sententious sayings: Matt. 5: 13; 6: 3; 7: 7, 8; 7: 13, 14.

The humor of Jesus: Matt. 7: 3-5; 15: 14; 19: 24; 23: 24.

Emerson once said that he would have given more for one glimpse of Cato jogging afield than for an entire book about him. Have you not often felt that if you could have seen and heard Jesus for fifteen minutes, it would have done more to make you realize what His teaching was like than all that you read in the Gospels? Let us try to make His manner of teaching seem as real as possible.

We have already seen that Jesus was not, in our sense of the word, a preacher. While He went on the Sabbath into the synagogue and, when He was invited, explained the scriptures, it was more like a Bible-class teacher than like a clergyman. Week days He sat upon the seat of a boat in the midst of fishermen. The multitude crowded the rooms and court-yard of any home where He was entertained. He spoke to people in the village squares and at the cross-roads, and on at least one occasion thousands came together upon a hill-slope near the lake and heard Him.

The impression which Jesus gave these people was probably chiefly of that of joyous surprise. The word "gospel" means good news. Whenever Jesus spoke, it was as one who had made a discovery which He wished to share with everybody. You can see what



PATH THROUGH THE FIELDS. ILLUSTRATING THE WAYSIDE HEARER.

(From "Leeper photographs," copyright, 1902. Courtesy of Hammond Publishing Co., Milwaukee.)

an appeal this would make to curiosity, to the natural desire for joy and for possible benefit. The other teachers of Jesus' time never ventured upon anything new. They spent their time in prosy commentaries upon the olden laws, giving no explanations for their existence and no motives for obeying them.

Not only were they dull, but it was an age of dullness. Nothing ever happened in Galilee. No new movement had started, and no outstanding man had appeared, since Judas the Galilean had started a rebellion over twenty years before. There were no newspapers. Into this dull time came this bright young carpenter, telling people something which to them was entirely new.

THE SKILL OF HIS METHODS.

Why has not some one called this wonderful teacher "Jesus, the Great"? Other men have been called "great," who have led armies, captured cities or wrought in stone, canvas or literature, but the teaching of Jesus has been more dynamic than any of these and has transformed the thinking and doing of the world.

We see the greatness of Jesus more clearly when we realize under what conditions He worked. The thought of Jesus was limited to the knowledge of His day as to nature and science. The men whom He addressed were nearly all at least able to read and write, but their only book was the Old Testament. The women were generally illiterate. To such people the whole world of scholarship was closed, and Jesus could use only the elements of common human experience.

Now notice how skillful were the methods of Jesus, thinking of them simply as intellectual devices; notice how perfectly well adapted they were to the people to whom He spoke.

STORIES.

His chief method was that of stories. At first how imperfect, how childish, seems such a method, but remember, it is the oldest means of knowledge. It is a universal means, appealing to all ages, bridging all languages, and understood by all races. You cannot translate a philosophy into the language of the savage, but you can tell the stories of Jesus to people of every race and creed. Stories are easily remembered and repeated. President Woodrow Wilson of Princeton University, after twenty years of teaching, said that his students forgot his

lectures, but remembered his illustrations. If Jesus wished to have His thought reproduced correctly He could not do so in any other way so well as by telling stories. People might misunderstand prosaic statements, but they would not forget His stories. A story is the best interpretation of life. The best way to describe a man or an idea is not to write an essay about it, but to illustrate it by a story.

Notice the topics of Jesus' stories. They were about things near at hand. When He was out of doors in the spring-time, He told spring-time stories about outdoor life. Over four hundred references to nature have been found in the Gospels. On other occasions He used illustrations from His own trade, that of a carpenter. He mentioned the homely tasks of the house-wife, and the games which the children were playing. He was fond of telling stories about the home life, using the father of the family as an illustration. He talked about the events of the day. A tower had fallen down and killed a few men, and Jesus referred to it. A patriot had started an insurrection, and Jesus mentioned that. Some years before, one of the Herods had gone to Rome to get a crown and had been refused, and Jesus told a story based upon his disappointment. His topics were general, that is, He talked about common things. He selected also fascinating topics for stories. He told about feasts and weddings, and since everybody likes to hear about kings, He told about kings and their courts.

ACTED STORIES.

Jesus used another method which was even more graphic. He not only told stories, but He acted them out. He called a child to Him and taking him in His arms He made the life of the child His text. When He was helping sick people He seems to have connected His stories and His deeds, much as a medical missionary to-day does while he is busy in his dispensary or hospital.



THE SOWER.

THE PROVERBS OF JESUS.

Another method was the proverb. The difference between a proverb and any other statement of truth is the difference between a parcel with and without a handle. The proverb is the handle by which memory carries away a truth. People could not forget the proverbs of Jesus because sometimes they stated a startling contrast. Again they were cast in the form of poetry, and others, like the Beatitudes, would not be forgotten because each sentence began with the same phrase. Some of the most memorable of the proverbs of Jesus are these:

“Salt is good, but if the salt has lost its flavor, wherewith shall it be salted again?”

“Whosoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so unto them.”

“If your eye is healthy, your whole body will be light; But if your eye is diseased your whole body will be darkened. Watch, then, lest the light that is in you be darkness.”

“It is better to go into life with one eye than to have two eyes and be cast into Gehenna.”

“A sound tree cannot bear rotten fruit, nor a rotten tree sound fruit.”

THE HUMOR OF JESUS.

One of the most effective rhetorical devices which men can use is humor. The evangelists were serious-minded people, and probably thought humor beneath the dignity of Jesus. They have left us, however, a number of illustrations of the humor of Jesus. You remember how one day Jesus was talking about intolerance. He told His listeners that any one unwilling to make allowances for the faults of another was as if one carpenter should ask his comrade to let him remove a splinter from his eye, when he himself had had a timber driven into his own. Speaking of the difficulty which rich men have to handle their wealth, and at the same time be kind and generous, He pictured a camel loaded with a great bundle, trying to squeeze through the eye of a needle. Ridiculing the punctilious Pharisees, He said they would strain out a gnat and then swallow a camel. He made light of the readiness with which people followed the most foolish and burdensome requirements of the Pharisees, by saying that it reminded Him of blind men trying to lead blind men. His words suggest a number of blind men putting their hands upon each other's shoulders and forming a line behind another blind man, who, leading them along a winding lane in the meadow, topples them all off into the muddy



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

LIFE ON THE SHORE OF GALILEE, AT TIBERIAS, PALESTINE.

ditch at the side. Humor flashes a sudden light upon a dark subject. It is much more effective than wit. A witty remark causes a laugh, but may hurt the feelings of a listener. Humor causes the hearer to take sides with the speaker.

GETTING HIS HEARERS TO SIDE WITH HIM.

There were other ways by which Jesus got His audience to take sides with Him, what President Tucker calls "Getting one's audience to preach with him."

Jesus appealed to knowledge. It flatters a hearer to be reminded that he knows something. He seems then to say to the speaker, "We start together at least." Thus the speaker builds upon what his hearers know, and upon that upon which they all agree. From that mutual standpoint it is not hard to broach something upon which they may not agree with him; so Jesus would say, "You have read, but . . ."

Jesus appealed to experience. This also arouses sympathy. We like to think back to what we have felt. Jesus was fond of saying, "What think ye?" "What man of you?" One universal experience that Jesus used most often was that of the "family," for the Jew was typically a family man, and the nation was the greatest topic of the day.

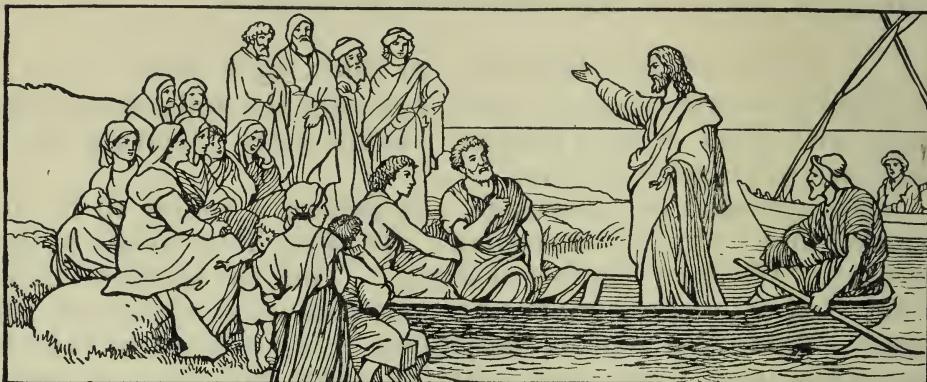
Then Jesus appealed to curiosity. His stories usually had a meaning that needed to be guessed or would naturally be discussed. He was always suggesting that there was something further to come. He urged them to "Learn of me." Once He told His listeners that He was going to reveal "what is known only to the initiated."

Jesus appealed to feeling. This is another way to get listeners to take sides. In all of Jesus' stories you find yourself taking just the side He wishes you to take. In the story of the prodigal you take sides three times,—first, in sympathy with the good father; second, in pity for the prodigal son; and third, in contempt for the unloving brother. In the story of the good Samaritan one takes sides four times,—first, in sympathy with the man who was robbed; second, in impatience against the priest; third, in contempt against the Levite; and fourth, in admiration for the good Samaritan.

Jesus appealed to reason. When He did this He would probably wait for a response. When He told men that anger was as evil as murder, that secret prayer was nobler than street praying, and that the Sabbath was made for man and not man for the

Sabbath, He knew it would take time for men to think out these statements and learn to agree with Him.

Finally Jesus appealed to action. He was always seeming



JESUS PREACHING FROM A BOAT.

to say, "Try this." He used the laboratory method. "Follow me." "Do and you will know." The Pharisee said "Wait for the kingdom"; Jesus said "Join it."

By all these appeals Jesus, the wonderful Teacher, touches the whole man.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scriptural material and the lesson story.

Name some of the places where Jesus was in the habit of teaching.

What impression did Jesus give to those who listened to Him?

Tell in your own language the first story of Jesus given in the scripture material, and its explanation.

Give an illustration of one of Jesus' acted stories.

Quote two or three of the proverbs of Jesus.

Give an illustration in your own words of Jesus' use of humor.

State exactly how Jesus causes us to take sides in His story of "The Prodigal."

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Bring in and read one of the stories of Jesus in some version other than the common ones. (The teacher will furnish such a version, if necessary.)

Give the class one or more of the pointed sayings of Jesus from apocryphal sources. (If the pupil does not have access to the New Testament apocrypha, the teacher will furnish a brief collection of such sayings.)

Give the class the four experiences of the farmer in Jesus' story of "The Sower."

Distinguish the different meanings of the four similar parables in the 13th of Matthew.

The pupils of any teacher may be: educated, i.e., learned; inclined to doubt his statements; willing to accept the teacher's statements without question; intellectually bright, but lazy; dissatisfied with their own present way of living. Which of

these traits would Jesus approve of in His pupils, and which would He consider unimportant, or even undesirable?

Just what action does Jesus demand from the members of our class after they have read the story of "The Good Samaritan"?

CHAPTER XIV.

JESUS' MESSAGE TO HIS NEIGHBORS.

The Father's nature and care: Luke 12: 22-32; 11: 1-13; 15: 1-7, 11-24.

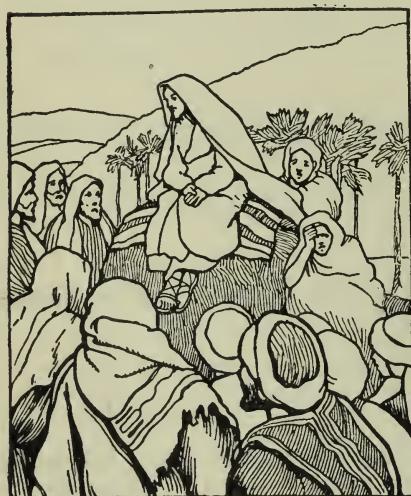
Old Testament expressions of this truth: Psalms 27, 33, 34; Isa. 63: 7-16; Jer. 31: 9, 20.

We may become sons of God: Luke 6: 35; 15: 18; Matt. 23: 9; John 1: 12.

Other New Testament expressions of this truth: Gal. 4: 6, 7; I John 3: 1-3, 10.

Last week we studied the *method* of Jesus' teaching. What did He say?

We can best understand what was Jesus' message to His neighbors if we realize just who His neighbors were. When He sat upon the stern of a boat and talked to a Capernaum gathering He looked into the faces of people, most of whom were discouraged, many of whom were burdened, some of whom were sick. The most religious of them were living dull and dreary lives in the endeavor to conform to the Pharisaic customs, and many others had given up the task and were sinners and outcasts. All of them, Jesus saw, were misusing



PREACHING THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.
(Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.
Courtesy of the McClure Tissot Co.)

life. Each of them was, as He Himself said, "Losing or forfeiting his own self." Jesus' one topic, therefore, was: "How to live."

Can we, after all these many centuries, and with our knowledge of His words since our childhood, make His teaching seem fresh? Or is it only to great sinners, to those deeply ignorant or in bitterest need, that what Jesus taught comes with *freshness*? If we cannot make it seem fresh we can at least make it seem *true*. And "Truth," as Phillips Brooks has said, "is never trite." Jesus taught little that was wholly new. He took old ideas and believed them, He related them one to another, and He lived them.

FATHERHOOD.

The three teachings on which Jesus laid most stress, in talking to His neighbors, were as follows:

The first was this: *We must trust in the Heavenly Father.* This sounds old and simple. But have men done it?

In Jesus' time the thought of God as Father was not a new one. Modern Jews are fond of calling attention to the fact that every phrase in the Lord's Prayer was found in the old prayers of their race. This may be true. They had heard that God was their Father, but few acted as if this were so. No one could have prayed the Lord's Prayer until Jesus taught its meaning. If the Jews thought of God as *Father*, it was as a *national King*. What they meant was this: He was the Father of the chosen *race*, and therefore He owed them success. He was a patron, rather than a parent. The result was that they turned to Him with a frightened clinging, a dreary waiting or a pompous formalism. How little did they appreciate that beautiful phrase in one of their own psalms, "They looked unto him, and their faces were lightened." Not as a child's face brightens at his father's coming did their faces grow radiant at the thought of God.

Let us see what Jesus taught. He looked around and pointed to the natural sights on every side, and spoke somewhat like this: "It is our Father who has made the birds of the air, the flowers of the field, the food which we enjoy. He made the hearts of earthly fathers, who give gladly to their children, who wake in the night to comfort them, who carry them when they are little, who catch them when they stumble, and who recover them after they are lost. Our Father is here now. He

is a listening Father. He hears us when we speak softly and in secret, even in our sin and our helpless longings. He is not a Father who is a mere King. Our King is our Father."

Jesus did not attempt to explain pain and bereavement and evil. He took the facts of life as they are, but He taught that God's power is as great as His love. That power is wielded by a will. That mighty will is for us, not against us. "It is not the will of your Father that one of his little ones should perish." 'Our Father is a militant God. He fights for us against diseases and misery. He fights in us against loneliness and sin. We are priceless to God.'

When Jesus said these things he was not speaking indefinitely. He did not think of men in general. He thought of Peter the impetuous; the woman who was a sinner; the sick who lay upon the strand about him, he thought even of Judas.

SONSHIP.

Another thing which Jesus taught His neighbors is this: *We must live as God's children.* This too is simple and old, but the Jews were living, not as children, but as slaves or as courtiers of God. They hoped that sometime, somewhere, they might enter into their heritage. But to Jesus sonship of God was not so distant a thing as that. By living as God's children, Jesus meant simply: being like God, imitating God. God loves even evil doers; let us treat kindly those who wrong us. God fights against disease and sin; let us fight against disease and sin (Matt. 12: 28). God is a peacemaker; let us make harmony in His world. God is uniting His children into a world brotherhood; let us live lovingly and generously as a part of His brotherhood.

Jesus told His hearers that they could live as God's children now and here. The most important thing was not that they should regain their political independence or have money and luxuries. Jesus wondered, as did our modern prophet, John Ruskin, "not so much at what men suffer, as at what they lose." What about the self? Was each man keeping or losing that? Our greatest English poet has put the question of Jesus in a most earnest way:

"Poor soul, the center of this sinful earth,
Vexed by these rebel powers that thee array,
Why dost thou pine within and suffer dearth,
Painting thy outward walls so costly gay?"



Copyright, by J. J. Tissot.

Courtesy of the Tissot Picture Society.

JESUS PREACHING IN A SHIP.

WHOLE-HEARTEDNESS.

So the third point which Jesus made in His early teaching was as to the necessity of whole-heartedness in claiming their divine sonship. "Let us throw our whole soul into this business of living as God's children; let us not permit minor things to obscure our vision of life's supreme goal." "Ye cannot serve God and mammon." "He that putteth his hand to the plow and looketh back is not fit for the kingdom of heaven." "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God"—not only—"with all thy heart"—but also—"with all thy strength."

Again as Jesus speaks He sees Peter giving only his half-best to his occupation as a fisherman, the sinful woman wasting the beautiful gifts of life, Judas asking of life only what it shall profit him in money-making. He sees what will happen if each of them gives his whole strength to a life as God's child. The fisherman will be not a hireling but a craftsman; the mother will be not a nurse, but an artist in life; the master will not be a slave-driver, but will be responsible for his brother workman; the man who has riches will be earnest in making them an expression of his sonship and brotherhood.

The one inquiry of Jesus was: "What are *you* doing with the gift of life?"

His own answer was "to trust God and to live as God's children."

One of the best summaries of what this kind of a life would mean is given in what we call the Beatitudes. We have them in their simplest form in the Gospel according to Luke, but in their best interpretation in the Gospel according to Matthew. They may be put in modern English as follows:

Happy are they who feel the need of God's help, for it is they who belong to the kingdom of heaven;

Happy are they who are hungry and thirsty for real goodness, for it is they who will be made happy;

Happy are they who are dissatisfied with themselves, for it is they who will become like God;

Happy are they who become hated and persecuted for these things, for heaven remembers such, and in this way the ancient prophets became sainted.

IS THIS POSSIBLE?

Is it really possible for men to act all the time as if they were sons of God? We might not think so, if some men had not disproved our doubt by really living in their divine sonship. Jesus

was the first to do so. When He was telling His neighbors how to live this life, He was really painting His own portrait. The Beatitudes are Jesus' autobiography. The best that we know about Jesus is not the words that He spoke, but the life that He lived. We revere and follow Him to-day because He Himself believed that He was a Son of God, and lived the life of sonship so constantly. Multitudes since then because of His teaching and life have endeavored to do so. You yourselves have fathers and mothers and friends who are doing so to-day. We shall see in the next chapter how this kind of life is the foundation of the kingdom of heaven. To-day it is enough if we can realize that it is the way by which one makes the most of his own life. Jesus would build His kingdom of brotherhood out of men who were first true sons to the Father.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What were the circumstances of some of Jesus' neighbors to whom He uttered His teachings?

Did they believe in the fatherhood of God?

How did their idea of this fatherhood differ from that of Jesus?

How was their attitude toward the divine Father in practical daily life different from that of Jesus?

Give some illustrations from nature, by which Jesus illustrated God's fatherhood.

Give some illustrations from the human family.

What, did Jesus teach, is God's attitude toward sorrow and pain?

How did Jesus teach His neighbors to live?

What would follow in the lives of Jesus' neighbors if they should really act as God's children?

Put the Beatitudes into your own language.

How have men shown that it is possible to live as God's children?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Imagine a village newspaper in the time of Jesus, and write a brief reporter's account of a visit and sermon of Jesus in that village.

From the references at the head of the lesson story, in the Old Testament, state what the best thought of the Old Testament was concerning the fatherhood of God.

What do you think is God's relation to our disappointments?

Recall or imagine a peculiarly sad experience to a family in the loss by death of a young son or daughter. Write down thoughtfully some of the ways by which God may reveal His fatherhood through that sorrow to that family; in the spiritual strength aroused, in the love and sympathy shared and expressed, in the life that ensues.

How can a high-school student live as a child of God? Make your answer very definite.

CHAPTER XV.

JESUS' PROCLAMATION OF THE KINGDOM.

SOME PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM.

The Kingdom as the rule of the Father: Matt. 13: 43; 18: 21-35; 20: 1-16.

The Kingdom as a divine-human brotherhood: Matt. 25: 31-46.

The development of the Kingdom: Mark 4: 1-20, 26-34.

The challenge of the Kingdom to the individual: Luke 12: 41-48; Matt. 10: 32-39; 21: 28-34.

"Already in the mind of God
That City riseth fair,
Lo, how its splendor challenges
The souls that greatly dare,—
Yea, bids us seize the whole of life
And build its glory there."

—W. Russell Bowie.

A short time ago the writer asked a class of pupils of the same age as those who are studying these lessons, what was the most

important teaching of Jesus. No one was able to answer the question. The questioner gave his own answer: Jesus' most important teaching was about the Kingdom of God. Then he asked, "What is the Kingdom of God?" Neither did any one know the answer to this question. Perhaps the same result would have taken place in other classes, if these two questions had been asked. We do not any of us understand as well as we ought, just what Jesus meant by that which was the chief interest of His life.

THE KINGDOM IDEA BEFORE THE TIME OF JESUS.

Nowhere in His teachings does Jesus give a definition of the Kingdom of God. This was not necessary. His hearers knew perfectly well what the words meant. Long before Jesus came, the ancient prophets, heartsick because of the wrong-doing and misery with which the world was cursed, had dreamed of a time when all these evils should be done away. In that future golden age, all nations should learn the principles of justice which had been taught to Israel by Jehovah. As a result, all injustice would cease among men. Even war, the greatest of all evils which have afflicted the human race, would be utterly abolished. Men would "beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." (Is. 2:4). In the prophecy of Daniel, this glorious future age is described as the triumph of the Kingdom of God. King Nebuchadrezzar had dreamed of a great image, made of gold, silver and various other materials. And in his dream, "a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image," and broke it in pieces. "And the stone which smote the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth." According to Daniel's interpretation, this dream represented the final triumph of God's rule, or God's Kingdom, over the entire human race. These glowing hopes were earnestly cherished by the Jewish people in the time of Jesus. Many of the people, however, were selfish in their hopes. They believed that God would rule the world through Israel. Their hearts were set on the glory of being rulers, rather than on that abolition of injustice, to which the prophets had looked forward. John the Baptist had caught the ear of the nation by beginning his teaching with the startling announcement, "The Kingdom of Heaven is just at hand." Yet he demolished their self-con-

fidence and pride of descent by telling them that if God wanted children of Abraham, in order to set up His Kingdom, He could turn the pebbles of the Jordan valley into children of Abraham by the millions. He made it perfectly clear that the way for the nation to prepare for the era of their Messiah-King, and to escape His wrath, was not to depend upon the supposed prerogatives of their Israelitish blood, but to begin a brotherly life, and equalize their social inequalities.

HOW AND WHEN THE KINGDOM WAS TO APPEAR.

These were the ideas which were current in men's minds when Jesus came. And the best and noblest of them Jesus accepted with all His heart. With all His heart He believed in the future ideal of a new order of society, in which the sovereign Father would rule the life and conduct of all; thus ancient injustice would be corrected, and ministration to the hungry, the poor, the sick, and evil-doers would be the employment of the sons of the Kingdom, until such ministrations should never more be needed.

This vision of the new era, indeed, was not entirely new with Jesus. His originality, however, is shown in His explanation of how and when it was to be brought into being. He differed from His neighbors on two vital points. They believed that the Kingdom was to be established by force and bloodshed. Jesus believed that God rules chiefly through moral influence. This idea He brought out in such parables as that of the forgiving king. "The Kingdom of heaven (that is the rule of heaven or God) is like a king who wished to make a reckoning with his servants. . . . And one debtor was brought before him who owed ten thousand talents. . . . So that servant fell down before him and did homage to him, saying, Be patient with me, and I will pay thee all. And the master of that servant pitied him and released him, and forgave him the debt." (Matt. 18:23-27.) In other words, the rule of our heavenly King is a merciful rule. He treats evil-doers kindly, and seeks in this way to win them to a better life. As we saw in an earlier chapter, Jesus taught that "God is a King who is a Father." His Kingdom is a kingdom of love; and love is the greatest force in the world. Armies and battleships can break down walls; but only love can soften hard hearts. And it is this force on which the sovereign Father relies, to accomplish His righteous purposes among men.

In the second place, Jesus differed from His neighbors as to *when* the Kingdom was to appear. They believed that this present world was hopelessly bad, and that the new era could only be ushered in by a sudden catastrophe, which they pictured to themselves as a great Judgment Day. Jesus perhaps agreed that the final and complete triumph of God's rule would only come after this Day of Judgment. But He also believed that the Kingdom was *beginning* to triumph, already. "If I by the Spirit of God cast out demons," He said, "then is the Kingdom of God come upon you."

The best way for us to-day to understand just how and when the Kingdom of God was to appear, according to Jesus' thought, is to turn to that very early parable which Jesus spoke, of which the Gospels take great pains to give an explanation. This is the parable of the sower. Very likely as Jesus spoke these words a farmer might have been seen working his field in the early spring-time, scattering the grain in the freshly prepared soil, in the confident hope of harvest.

We may put the thought of Jesus, as expressed in this story, in language something like this. The thought that God has a right to rule human life has been sown broadcast among men like good seed. When this thought falls into the life of a man who has no room for it, because his heart is utterly hard and selfish, it never appears above the surface. When it falls into the lives of those who are too superficial to take it into the real depths of their hearts, it springs up too soon, and then withers away. When it falls into lives that are full of other things, it simply becomes smothered. When it is taken into thoughtful minds and sincere hearts, it grows and bears fruit. So, slowly and with many discouragements and failures, the Kingdom grows according to the varying responses of men.

The same teaching appears in the parable of the seed growing of itself, which only Mark has preserved for us. "So is the Kingdom of God," Jesus says, "as if a man should cast seed on the earth. . . . The earth beareth fruit of herself, first the



THE SOWER.

green shoot, then the ear, then the ripened grain in the ear." (Mark 4:26-28.) In other words, God's rule triumphs gradually



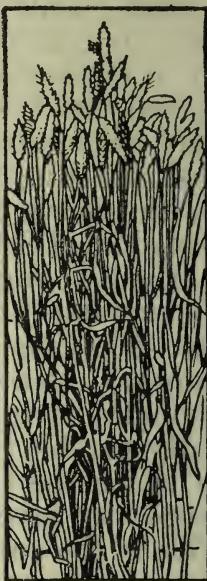
THE WAYSIDE.



STONY GROUND.



THORNY GROUND.



GOOD GROUND.

The Four Kinds of Soil in the Parable of the Sower.

as the result of the growth of new and righteous purposes in men's hearts.

Jesus was right. When men do receive into their lives the thought that God deserves their loyal obedience, they arouse and claim their sonship. But it takes a long time to get this thought to sprout. Jesus once hoped that all the people in Galilee would see this truth and receive it, but the time came when they disappointed Him, and He had to turn to His few disciples and spend the rest of His life in helping them to believe thoroughly in their sonship to God. A foreign missionary to-day often spends years in persuading his ignorant and hard-hearted hearers of the love and goodness of



THE LEAVEN,

God, and the privileges of sonship. Nevertheless, "the seed of the Kingdom" is good seed, and possesses remarkable vitality. In spite of difficulties it takes root in this individual and that. And then the process of growth spreads out beyond individuals, and, like yeast in a mass of dough (see Matt. 13:33), begins to revolutionize human society. Jesus was not a revolutionist, in the sense that He ever consented to lead a bloody revolution. But He was a revolutionist, in the sense that He sowed the idea of the triumph of God's Kingdom in the hearts of men, and this idea has ever since then been transforming the world.

THE SOCIAL MESSAGE OF THE KINGDOM.

The controlling purpose of our lives, according to Jesus, should be loyalty to God's Kingdom. "Seek ye first his kingdom." "When ye pray, say, Our Father . . . Thy Kingdom come." The force of these sayings of Jesus is not always fully appreciated. Some men are selfish even in their religion. They seem to think of religion merely as a kind of passport whereby they themselves by and by can be sure of entrance into heaven. But by "seeking first God's Kingdom," Jesus meant something nobler than that. He meant that we should first of all submit our own lives to God's rule; and not only that, but we should then do all in our power to help on the triumph of that rule among all our fellow men. We should seek to make the city in which we live, a "city of God," and our nation, a nation "whose God is Jehovah." When one really catches the Kingdom idea of Jesus, one realizes the importance of many things that hitherto may have seemed trivial. If each duty and relation of ours is a Kingdom-duty and a Kingdom-relation, then, as Phillips Brooks has told us, we shall no longer "reduce life to the pettiness of our daily living; we shall exalt our daily living to the grandeur of life." The discussion of to-day's topics for individual report will show us how we may practically do this in school and everyday life.

What a vision was this which Jesus held up before men! Its spirit came from Him; He was the first to inspire men with the unquenchable hope that such an ideal is possible, and ever since His time this glowing ideal which He gave to the world has been the noblest inspiration of men. Jesus believed not only that this Kingdom is to be a triumphant power in the world. He also thought of it as extending into the life beyond death, and including the immortal life of men with God. Here

was a very great service, in that He not only made immortality seem sure, but He made it seem worth while.

His faith in the Kingdom is seen in the fact that He lived its life. This is the supreme fact about Jesus' proclamation. He lived what He proclaimed. He gave His own life to the rule of God. He lived as a brother to men. He wrought for the future. Some particular acts of His were noticeable expressions of this spirit. His refusal to pay deference to men of money, His fondness for the poor, His indifference whether His new-found brothers were Jews or Gentiles, His final procession into the capital, surrounded by the populace, His insistence, when on trial, that His mission was to establish a Kingdom, fidelity to which meant death at the hands of those who opposed it—these were the guarantees that He gave that He believed what He taught.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.
What is the Kingdom of God?

In what sense may we "enter" it now?



VIEW ON THE SEA OF GALILEE.

In what sense is it not yet come?

Had Jesus' listeners ever heard of the Kingdom of God?

Who had taught them about it?

What had John the Baptist taught about the Kingdom?

In what way did Jesus teach that the Kingdom was to appear?

Tell in your own words the first parable by which Jesus explained the Kingdom.

Explain what Jesus meant by the first kind of soil. What by the second. What by the third. What by the fourth.

In what sense is the Kingdom of God an individual thing?

What is our duty to it as individuals?

In what sense is it social?

What is our social duty to the Kingdom?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

How did the Pilgrim Fathers express the Kingdom idea?

How did Abraham Lincoln help the Kingdom of God to triumph?

Mention other great men who helped the cause of the Kingdom among men.

Find what seems to you the best hymn in the church hymn-book about the Kingdom, and read it to the class.

Is it possible to bring in the Kingdom of God under conditions in which little children are employed as laborers?

What is our duty, in the cause of the Kingdom, under such conditions?

What is our duty, in the cause of the Kingdom, when the labor of ignorant men is used for unjust profit and their lives are wasted by poverty and incessant toil?

What is our duty, in the Kingdom, when greed grows wealthy by making the temptation of the innocent a business?

State three ways in which a high-school student can practically engage in service for the Kingdom.

CHAPTER XVI.

A NIGHT AND DAY OF PERIL.

The storm on the lake at night: Mark 4:35-41.

The encounter with the giant: Mark 5:1-10, 17-20.

The arousing to life of the daughter of Jairus: Mark 5:22-43.

“Be not afraid, only believe.”

Mark 5:36.

“Love is and was my King and Lord,
And will be, tho’ as yet I keep
Within his court on earth, and sleep
Encompassed by his faithful guard,

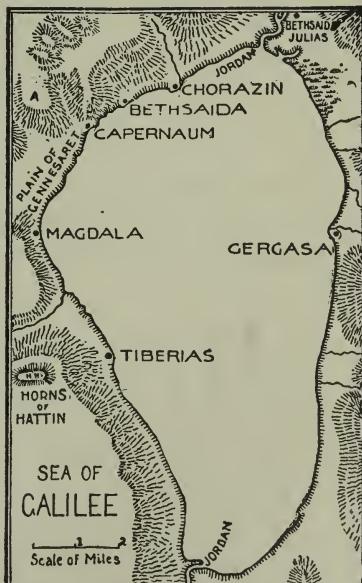
And hear at times a sentinel
Who moves about from place to place,
And whispers to the worlds of space,
In the deep night that all is well.

And all is well, tho’ faith and form
Be sunder’d in the night of fear;
Well roars the storm to those who hear
A deeper Voice across the storm.”

—Tennyson: In Memoriam.

The life of Jesus at Capernaum was not without adventure.

One afternoon, finding that the interested multitude would not give Him time even to sleep, He started to cross the lake of Galilee in a boat. In the gathering darkness He slipped away with His nearest friends from the city strand. The waters and the surrounding hills were peaceful. There was a fine sunset, with perhaps a hint of storm on the horizon. Jesus dropped asleep on the square boat seat in the stern, and the fisher boat, wafted by the rising breeze, sprang swiftly forward, with the friends of Jesus on watch. Suddenly with the night the tempest fell. The fishermen leaped to furl the sail, and then bent to the heavy oars in an endeavor to keep the boat before the wind.



SEA OF GALILEE AND SUR-
ROUNDINGS.

The Orientals are an excitable people. Blithe in joy, they are like children in a panic, and it was not long before the nearest shook Jesus wildly by the shoulder, and spoke the terror of all, when he shouted through the storm,

“Awake! We are sinking!”

Jesus leaped to His feet. Is there any greater trial of a man’s courage than to wake him from sleep, face to face with death? This supreme test of manliness Jesus met. He was not afraid! Later the disciples thought that His lack of fear was because He

had magic power to stop the storm and knew that He was in no real danger. We perhaps can judge His attitude more justly, when we recall what Jesus said. His quiet question of His friends was, “Why are you afraid?”

Why was He Himself not afraid?

Is not the answer, that He actually believed what He had taught about the Father? He not only *said* what we were studying in the last chapter, but

JESUS ASLEEP IN THE STORM.

He *lived* it. The storm was a real peril, but Jesus, even in peril, could brave it, because, as one of our own poets has said:

“Well roars the storm to those who hear
A deeper Voice across the storm.”

If I am alone in the storm I must be frightened, as the disciples were, but if my God and Father is in the storm with me, I can be brave. This was what Jesus was thinking.

THE GIANT MADMAN.

When they drew to land on the Eastern shore there came down from the cave-tomb to the strand to meet them a giant madman. He was foul and naked, and upon his mighty arms and legs were broken pieces of the chains with which men in vain had tried to hold him. Here he lived in the rocks, shouting and yelling and gashing his body in his periods of rage with the sharp flint, and no one now ever dared come near him. The fishermen quailed before this fiend as he loomed over them in the moonlight at the landing.

But Jesus stepped quietly out and faced him. Would not the wild man tear Him to pieces? No! At a quiet word from Jesus he fell humbly at His knees and embraced them, crying out in a piteous voice, "What is there between thee and me, Jesus? I adjure you to torment me not."

An hour later some of the simple shepherds of the region ventured around the shadowed crags, and there they saw Jesus seated beside the lunatic, who was now clothed and in sound mind. They were so superstitious that they were alarmed at the power Jesus had shown over this mighty man, and they made signs at Him, entreating Him to leave their country. Jesus went toward His boat to depart. The giant followed, still talking reverently with Him, and when he understood that Jesus was now going away, he begged eagerly, "Let me go with you, Jesus. Let me also be one of those who follow after you."

For the first time and apparently the only time in His life, Jesus encouraged a man to tell of the wonder which had been wrought in his own life.

"Go back to your own home," said Jesus gently. "Go back to your old friends and tell them what great things God has done for you." Here again we can study the attitude of Jesus. Not only did He, who believed that His Father was with Him everywhere, not quail at the madman, but



THE HILL NEAR GERA.

(Copyright, 1898, by A. J. Holman & Co.
Philadelphia.)

He exerted His power, with the Father's help, to quell the turmoil in the madman's mind, and bring him back to self control.



THE GERAENE DEMONIAC.

A GOOD MORNING TO A NEIGHBOR'S LITTLE GIRL.

Jesus may have rested here in the solitudes a little while. Soon after, however, on His return, occurred one of the most touching incidents of which we have mention in the life of Jesus. No sooner had He reached the beach at Capernaum than the usual crowd gathered about Him. While He was still by the shore the president of the synagogue came down and fell impulsively at His feet, sobbing with grief. "O Master!" he cried. "My little daughter is at the point of death, but come, place your hands upon her and you can bring her back to life."

Jesus moved rapidly up the beach toward the city, with the distracted father, followed by the multitude who thronged Him on every side. The enthusiastic faith of many in Jesus was so great at this time that they believed even the touch of His body or of His garments would bring renewed strength. This very morning a woman who was ill felt her way to Him in the crowd, and pulled at the corner of His cloak and pressed her lips to the fluttering fringe. Secretly, so as not to expose Him to ceremonial uncleanness, she touched His garments. There is a touch of pathetic humor in the statement in the Gospels that "she had suffered much from many physicians." When we recall that some of the favorite remedies of the crude medical science of that time were the heads of mice, the eyes of crabs, owl's brains, boiled snails, and scorpions boiled in wine, we can understand what her mental as well as physical

torments might have been. Jesus turned gently to see who it was, and called her forth from the crowd. He may have done this to help her to a courage which should cast out fear, while He spoke to her a message of the Father which should use that very courage to help her recovery. At any rate, her tremulous mind was calmed, she raised herself with a thankful smile, and went away, asserting that she was thoroughly well.

In all these instances in which Jesus showed in practical life how trust in the heavenly Father helps toward poise and peace



TOUCHING JESUS' GARMENT.

and health, He accompanied his acts by words of faith: "Peace! Be still." "Thy faith had made thee whole." "Fear not, only believe." In both these instances of restoration to health one cannot but be impressed with the similarity of Jesus' method to those which are so commonly and successfully used to-day, in certain kinds of nervous and mental malady and unrest, in which encouragement to quiet Christian trust becomes the strongest possible aid to the other methods of the physician and the recovery of the patient.

In the meantime a rumor had come from the house of the president of the synagogue that the little girl was already dead. "Be of good cheer," whispered Jesus, with His hand in that of His friend. "Only have faith."

Jesus hastened on, and at the door of the home He asked His friends to drive back the crowd. Coming into the silent chamber where the little girl, a child of twelve years of age, was lying cold and still, Jesus seems to have suggested that she was not dead but in a state of coma. First, He reassured the distracted parents: "Fear not, only believe." Then He put out the noisy crowd of mourners. With a friend or two and the father and mother He stepped to the bedside. There was probably a word of prayer, for His own sake that He might do the Father's work, for the parents that they might be trustful and comforted, since even death is not disaster but only one of the Father's ways of bringing our loved ones to Himself. Then going up to the child He took her by the hand, and in a strong, firm voice, as if He were calling her from her night sleep, He said: "My little girl, I am speaking to you. It is time for you to get up." The little girl slowly opened her eyes, and lifted by the arm of Jesus she slowly sat up and Jesus gave her to the embraces of her enraptured father and mother. He quietly insisted that they should not allow the news to get spread abroad, and in a sensible manner asked that she should be given her breakfast.



JAIRUS' DAUGHTER.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.
Tell in your own language Jesus' adventure in a storm.

Tell in your own words the experiences of Jesus with the giant demoniac.

What superstition led the afflicted woman to touch the fringe of Jesus' cloak?

Describe what occurred when Jesus entered the house of Jairus.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Why did Jesus ask the giant, after he was cured, to tell his friends about his recovery, when before this Jesus had never allowed any one else to do so?

Find other instances of the mastery of one intellect by another for the cure of derangement (the teacher is prepared to help, if necessary, in this search).

Learn (from your family physician perhaps) how the influence of mental suggestion is used to-day in the cure of diseases apparently similar to those mentioned in this lesson.

Suppose yourself about to undergo a severe surgical operation. Put down thoughtfully a brief statement of the frame of mind by which you might best express your trust in God, thus co-operating with the surgeon both before and after the use of his skill.

Bring in and read to the class the hymn, "Fierce was the wild billow," by Anatolius, and explain briefly to the class how this poem states the help which Jesus is to one in the stormy experiences of life.

WORK FOR ALL.

Turn to Map 24, and bring it up to date by filling out the words which name places and events which have already been studied.

CHAPTER XVII. BACK TO HIS OLD HOME.

Jesus' visit to Nazareth: Mark 6: 1-6.

NOTE.—This unusual number of New Testament references has been collected with care in order that the pupil may be enabled to make a study of the New Testament idea of the miracles of Jesus, with the following points especially in mind: Jesus' own attitude toward His marvellous works; the accounts given as to His methods in performing them; and the explanations of them which were accepted at the time.

Jesus' attitude toward His wonderful works:

His reluctance as to exhibiting "signs": Mark 8:12; Luke 12:54-56; John 4:48; 6:26.

His endeavor to keep them secret: Matthew 8:4; 9:30; Mark 7:36.

His acknowledgment that others could perform such deeds: Mark 9:38-40; Matthew 12:27; 24:24.

His promise that His disciples should do mightier works: John 14:12.

Why He performed them: Mark 1:41; Matthew 14:14; 20:34.

How He performed them:

With prayer: Mark 1:34, 35; 9:29; Matthew 7:7, 11.

By co-operation of the faith of the subjects: Mark 9:23; 10:52; John 11:40.

Through prayer of friends: Matthew 17:21.

With appeal to the sufferer to do something for himself: Mark 2:11; 3:3-5; 5:41.

With healing methods: Mark 7:32-34; 8:23-25.

With ceremonial observances: Mark 1:44.

Followed by forgiveness and the injunction not to sin: Mark 2:51; John 5:14.

Limited by unbelief: Mark 6:5, 6; Matthew 11:20.

How His works were explained:

Miracles were a popular expectation: John 6:28-31; 1 Cor. 1:22, 23.

By His kindred: He was insane: Mark 3:21.

By Herod: He was the spirit of John the Baptist: Mark 6:14.

By the scribes: He was possessed: Mark 3:22; Matthew 9:34.

By the people: God had given Him power: Matthew 9:8; Luke 5:17; 7:16; 9:43; John 6:14.

It seems to have been a number of months after Jesus transferred His family from Nazareth to Capernaum, before He went back to His old home again. He probably hoped that the influence of His message would be greater after His old neighbors had learned of His reputation from outside.

One Sabbath He appeared in the synagogue where as a young man He had often listened to the reading and explanation of the scriptures. After the service of praise and prayer was over Jesus was asked to read and explain the scripture for the day.

It is not difficult to imagine the animated scene. The simple white building was, no doubt, crowded with villagers. The men sat in the body of the house upon the floor, and as many women as could get in sat behind the curtain in the rear. There is no evidence that His disciples were with Him, but it is natural to suppose that His mother, and perhaps some of His brothers and sisters were His old neighbors.



CHRIST IN THE SYNAGOGUE AT NAZARETH.

(Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.
Courtesy of the McClure Tissot Co.)

present to hear Him address

A DEMAND FOR MARVELS.

The day, however, turned out to be one of heartache to Jesus and His relatives. The Nazareth people found it hard

to believe in Jesus because they had not noticed anything extremely marvellous in His early life among them. They were hungry to see Him perform "a mighty work," such as they had heard exaggerated rumors of, in their own village square. They did not realize that their very attitude of love of sensation and distrust would be an effective hindrance to Jesus' endeavors even to relieve the suffering. Still less did they understand that Jesus' every act was guided by the motive of righteous and loving service. For Him to do a wonder for His own good or to give an exhibition of His powers for any purpose other than to comfort a distressed heart or to help a pain-racked body was not consistent with His modest and noble character.

The early Christians were influenced to some extent by this common tendency to overemphasize mere marvels, and to under-emphasize moral worth as an evidence of God's presence. This is especially clear in some of the writings which have come to us from a later period than the New Testament. In these later writings, for example, the boy Jesus is pictured as making birds of clay and then, by clapping His hands, causing them to fly away as real birds. Many other extravagant and purposeless deeds are attributed to Jesus by writers of the first Christian centuries. The writings of our New Testament evangelists, on the other hand, are conspicuously in contrast with these later writings, in this regard. The New Testament writers were indeed human like ourselves, and it would be strange if they did not reflect to some extent the human failings as well as the spiritual strength of the Christian communities in which they lived. On the whole, however, it is a striking fact that in the four Gospels the unique moral greatness of the Master is everywhere brought into the foreground.

We find, here at Nazareth, a Teacher with a great message from God and a humble spirit, ready to help the sick, but unwilling to seek self-aggrandizement, even when He was invited to it. And we find His old neighbors so anxious for some spectacular expression by Him which should convince the nation that the Messiah had come out of their own village that they were unwilling to give Him a hearing.

JESUS AND THE SICK.

Some carefully chosen references to the Gospels will be found indicated at the head of this chapter which will give a fair idea

of the conception they had as to Jesus' relation to the cure of disease. His motive was compassion. He could not bear to leave any sufferer who was brought to Him without extending whatever relief was in His power. In instances where He healed we find that He rendered aid as quietly as possible, almost invariably insisting upon secrecy, from the patient and His friends. He was very dependent upon implicit faith in the Father, expressed in prayer, both by Himself and those who were present. He was also insistent that the sick man's heart should be made clean as well as his body. He often demanded that the sufferer should do something for himself, and at times He seems to have used simple medical appliances.

We feel that we now understand how some of His healings were wrought. For example, we know that "demon possession" was a name then given to various mental disorders, which are relieved now by mental treatment, in which talking to the patient is prominent. Further, it is probable that many other cures by Jesus we would to-day easily recognize as "mental healing." As to still other instances, we must admit that we are not quite sure of the medical aspects, because of lack of sufficient medical knowledge at that time to give a correct diagnosis.

THE MIGHTY WORKS OF JESUS.

The essential thing for us to learn to-day is that, at Nazareth, as probably was the case elsewhere, the attitude of the people prevented Jesus from doing what He would otherwise have been able to do. That is, *they refused to give attention to the main thing*. They raised side issues and even false issues. The main thing with Jesus was not healing a few sick people, but rescuing men from sin, bringing them into loving trust toward the Father and inspiring them to loving service of their fellow men, of which the care and cure of the sick is a part. These were Jesus' real mighty works. His unique greatness lies in His power to do this, not in His ability to control external forces.

Your allegiance to Jesus does not depend, your discipleship of Him does not hang, upon an exact settling of the question of miracles, regarding which we can never get complete knowledge.

Whether they can be fully explained or not, the so-called miracles take their place in the Gospel portraits of Jesus, and they form a halo and not a disfigurement. They suggest that



CHRIST BLESSING LITTLE CHILDREN.
From a painting by H. Hofmann.

radiant transcendence which is seen in Him after every thoughtful study of Him has been made. They also hint at the unmeasurable result of His consecration of His fullest powers to express the Father's will by deeds of love and help. Even though many so-called miracles of Jesus can be explained by laws of God that we now call natural, this does not change the essential impression of the person and purpose of the Master which has been cherished by the Christian centuries. His whole life was the one great miracle of history. The supreme evidence that God was in Jesus is just Jesus Himself, and not any external or physical thing whatever.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Describe the impression made by Jesus upon His return to Nazareth.

Explain this result.

What did His old neighbors demand from Him?

What was Jesus' position when He was requested to furnish "signs"?

Why did Jesus perform His deeds of healing secretly?

Why did He perform them at all?

What methods do the accounts of the evangelists state that Jesus used?

What explanations of Jesus' deeds were given by the scribes?

By His own kindred?

By Herod?

By the people in general?

What was the real "mighty work" of Jesus which His old neighbors failed to perceive?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Look up in the article on "Medicine," in the Bible Dictionary, the ancient Jewish ideas of physiology.

From the same source bring the class some information about the Jewish use of medicines.

Find out something about exorcism.

What does the hymn, "At even ere the sun was set," by Henry Twells, teach us regarding the purposes of Jesus' acts of mercy?

Bring to the class headings which you have jotted down, to show from the following references the results of Jesus' deeds of mercy. (Mark 3:7, 8; Mark 1:27; Matt. 8:34; Matt. 12:13, 14; Matt. 11:20; Luke 7:16; John 6:14).

Contrast the accounts of Jesus' miracles with those of some of the medieval saints.

How do Jesus' works of mercy furnish guidance in modern charity?

How, in modern medical practice?

WORK FOR ALL.

Three of the class are asked to assume the parts of imaginary characters who listened to Jesus,—one His boyhood teacher, the second a boyhood

friend, the third an entire stranger, and to conduct a brief imaginary conversation, such as might have taken place in front of the synagogue before the service began that day.

Let three of the class assume three other characters, one a brother of Jesus living in Nazareth, the second a rigid Pharisee and the third an ignorant stranger, and conduct an imaginary conversation that might have taken place after the service was over.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE ADVENTURES OF HIS TWELVE MESSENGERS.

The increasing fame of Jesus: Mark 3:7-12.

Jesus' instructions to the Twelve: Mark 6:7-11.

The adventures of the Twelve: Mark 6:7-13, 30, 31.

The ministering women: Luke 8:1-3; Mark 15:40, 41.

“Many loved truth, and lavished life’s best oil
 Amid the dusk of books to find her,
 But these our brothers fought for her,
 At life’s dear peril wrought for her,
 So loved her that they died for her!

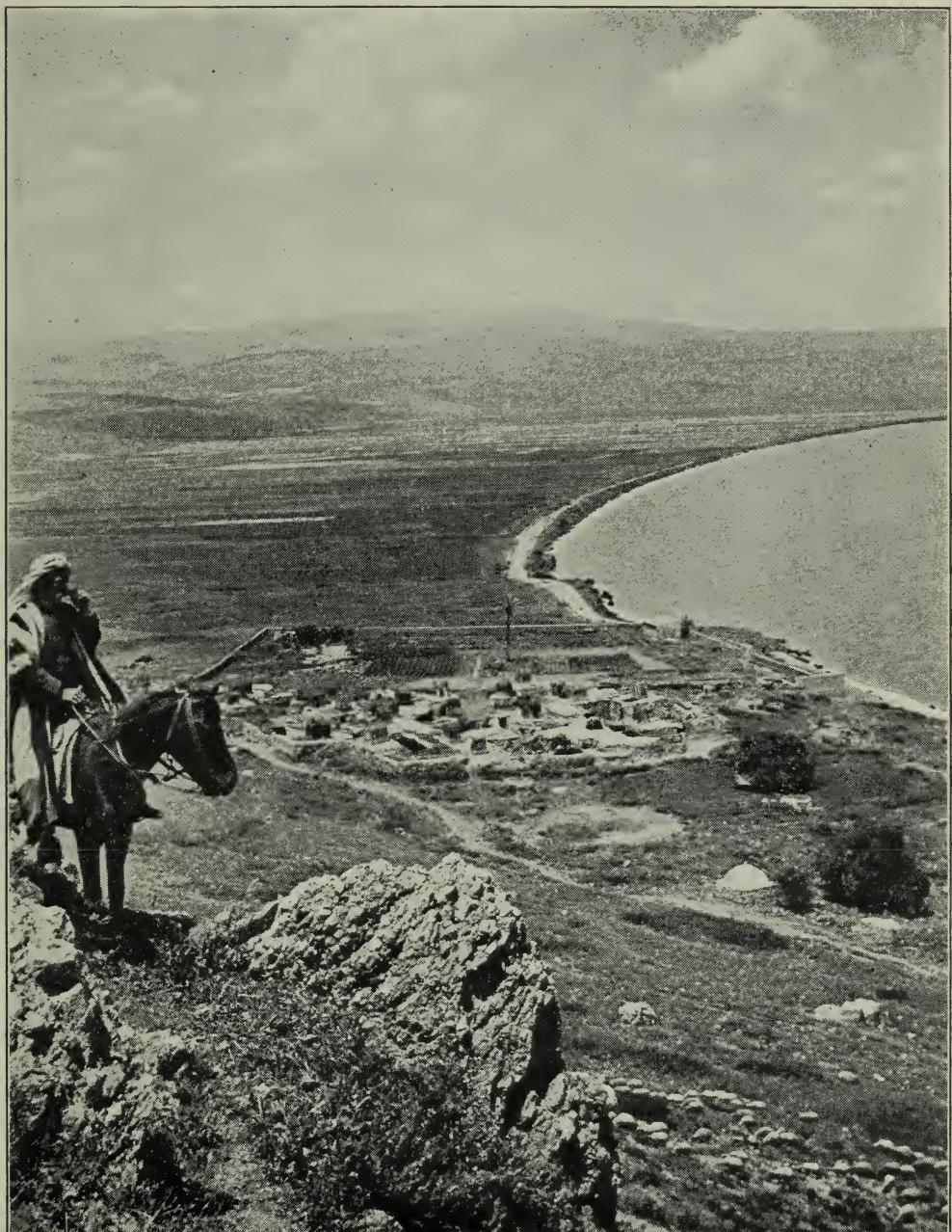
Their higher instinct knew,
 They love her best who to themselves are true,
 And what they dare to dream of, dare to do!

They followed her and found her
 Where all may hope to find,
 Not in the ashes of the burnt-out mind,
 But beautiful,—with danger’s sweetness round her:
 Where faith made whole with deed
 Breathes its awakening breath
 Into the lifeless creed.”

—James Russell Lowell: Commemoration Ode.

After the twelve Disciples had been with Jesus for a number of months He sent them out two by two through the villages and hamlets of Galilee. It seems to have been at this time that He gave them the name “Apostles.” This is a very important word because it defines what they were to do. An apostle is one who not only carries a message but represents the one who sends it. These twelve men were not only to repeat what they had learned from Jesus, but they were to try as far as they could to act as He would act in their places.

Their outfit was the simplest. Each of them carried nothing .



Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

PLAIN OF GENNESARET AND THE SEA, NORTH FROM ABOVE
MAGDALA TO UPPER GALILEE, PALESTINE.

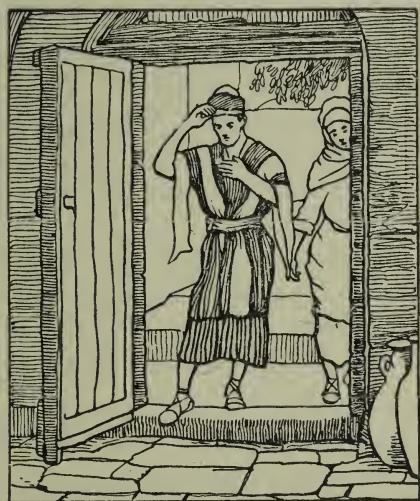
but a staff. They were not even to take a leather bag for carrying the provisions, and they were to put no money in their purses. In addition to sandals for the feet and a covering for the head, each one wore a tunic or coat, which was a garment something like a long shirt, with a girdle or belt around the waist, and a cloak, which was hardly more than a large square piece of cloth. When a man wore two tunics it was as a sign of wealth and Jesus forebade this. The reason that they needed neither money nor provisions was because they went afoot. Foot travelers can carry little if any extra food and clothing. It was the custom to give even strangers food and shelter for nothing, especially if they were fellow Israelites.



DISCIPLES JOURNEYING.

People would have been insulted if they had been offered pay. Jesus told them after they had gone into a house to remain there until they left the town. Whatever the quality of their entertainment, they were to accept it patiently, and to have but one stopping-place for each village. He told them to eat also whatever was offered them, without asking questions.

At times a number of women accompanied them, although probably not for long journeys. One of them was the mother of James and John, and another was the mother of James the Little and Joses. These good



SALUTING A HOUSE.

(Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.
Courtesy of the McClure Tissot Co.)

friends seemed to have been their caretakers and nurses, and perhaps sometimes when they were on long journeys, their food and the care of their clothing depended upon their activity.

THE WORK THEY DID.

You may wonder what these Apostles could have to teach. We know how even to the very last they misunderstood Jesus in so many ways. They were often proud and selfish and obtuse, and they lacked sympathy with women and children. The Gospel according to Mark tells us that they "preached that men should repent." Theirs must have been a very simple



Copyright J. J. Tissot 1895-6

SENDING OUT THE DISCIPLES TWO BY TWO.

message. They probably went rapidly from place to place, talking informally with groups of people, and sometimes gathering large companies in village squares and in synagogues. Their work while urgent was not hurried, yet they would not remain long in a place, because they had not yet much to say. They could repeat and endeavor to explain such teachings of Jesus so far as they understood

them. They at least aroused a spirit of expectancy, they made the people feel that Jesus was continuing the work by which John the Baptist had made such a deep impression throughout the nation, and they prepared the way for the coming of Jesus Himself, who probably often rejoined them, both for their encouragement and to give them further instruction.

The Apostles also imitated their Master in deeds of mercy. The special work which they were able to do was to relieve some who, according to the belief of the time, were possessed of demons. An instance is given, however, in which they failed in this work.

THE RESULTS OF THEIR WORK.

We do not know much about the results of their mission. No doubt they aroused the curiosity of people and prepared them to listen to Jesus with attention when He should appear. Although we find it easy to-day to criticise them because of their occasional meanness and short-sightedness, we must remember what splendid qualities they possessed. Although they were none of them well-to-do, they had left their little all to follow

Jesus, and must have met with much ridicule and coldness in their work. Jesus was wise and thoughtful in sending them out in pairs, so that one could refresh the courage of the other. None of them, except Peter and John and James, ever made very much stir in the world, but they were the ones who, beyond everybody else, had the privilege of long companionship with the Master, and after they had learned to understand Him, we may be sure that their quiet work did much to convince others of His truth and love. Jesus certainly appreciated them, and as time went on and Jesus became popular, and other men craved the privilege of becoming of their number, Jesus gave His twelve comrades the indirect compliment of setting up before these new candidates conditions of discipleship which the Twelve had willingly met. When a doctor of the law wished to become one of the Twelve Jesus reminded him that He and His followers were more homeless than the foxes and the birds. He refused to let one say farewell to his friends and still another to attend his father's funeral; and when His mother and brothers and sisters were waiting for Him one day in a crowd, and He was told that they were present, He looked lovingly around the circle of His faithful friends and said,—“These are my brothers,—these who know the will of God and do it.”

After some weeks of journeying through the Galilean villages the Twelve seem to have come back to Jesus and continued as His pupils. Again and again they probably went forth as His commissioners, but as His days grew short He regarded as more important that they should thoroughly understand His teaching and be ready to take up His work after He must lay it down.

THEIR LATER CAREERS.

After the death of Jesus these twelve disciples did a varying and a few of them a distinguished work in spreading the gospel of Jesus. Their lives, though consecrated, were not abnormal. They married, some of them had homes, the majority of them continued to work each at his own calling. But the time of



HEAD OF PETER.
From a Roman bas-relief.

most of them was spent in journeyings, in labors and in sufferings. They could not but be conspicuous, this little handful who had actually lived with Jesus.

As we look back now upon the lives of the Twelve we see that theirs was a four-fold work. First, it was their privilege, as it



PETER PREACHING.

has been that of all Christians since, to try to imitate Jesus, to live the life which He would have them live. Second, they were interpreters of Jesus. It was theirs to endeavor to remember and tell the words of Jesus, to explain His acts and in every possible way to try to reproduce His spirit for the men who came after Him. Third, they gave up their lives to the spread of this knowledge of Jesus wherever possible. One perhaps remained in Jerusalem and sent out Jewish Christians wherever Jews were scattered to tell them about their Messiah; another, like Peter, had the privilege of stepping over the boundaries of race and telling of the Master to people of other lands; some perhaps went back to their fishing nets, and, according to their ability, witnessed for Him in their daily work. Thus they represented the different fields of Christian service now. And lastly, it was the solemn privilege of many of them (tradition says of all but one of them) to die for the sake of Jesus, and thus witness to the world the power of a faith which is loyal to the uttermost.

Gigantic heroes! At first humble workmen, how the presence and example of Jesus exalted them!

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What equipment did the Twelve carry on their journey?

What part did women have in helping the cause of Jesus?

Are the disciples to be thought of as preachers or as messengers or as teachers?

In what especial work of healing did they imitate their Master?

Why did Jesus send them out two by two?

What demands did Jesus make upon men who later thought they might like to become His companions?

What kind of work did they do after the death of Jesus?

What was their four-fold work?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Give in your own words the dialogue which might have occurred when Peter and Andrew came to the city gate of a new town and endeavored to explain their message to a stranger.

What do you think Jesus was doing while the Twelve were away?

Read to the class the hymn, "O Master, let me walk with Thee," by Washington Gladden, and say briefly what things it describes in Jesus' daily life which it is our privilege to imitate.

CHAPTER XIX.

THOSE WHO WERE WITH AND AGAINST JESUS.

Jesus' conversations with the Pharisees: Mark 7:1-23.

Stories which Jesus told the Pharisees: Luke 15:1-32.

The attitude of Jesus to sinners: Mark 2:15-17; John 8:3-11.

JESUS' DIFFERENCES WITH THE PHARISEES.

Wherever Jesus went He came into daily contact with the

Pharisees. They were, as we have said, the schoolmasters of the nation. It was they who were especially prominent as speakers in the synagogue services. While in theory any reputable Jew might be asked to explain the scriptures, a difference was made between the interpretation of an individual and the authorized pronouncements of the Pharisaic body. Whenever the two clashed, as they did in the case of the teaching of Jesus and that of such Pharisees as He met either in the synagogues of



PRAYING TO BE SEEN BY MEN.

Galilee or in other places of public resort, there was bound to be opposition from those who claimed to be the official expounders of the Law. The greater the influence of Jesus the more bitter must that opposition become.

Among the many points concerning which Jesus and the Pharisees differed, two came into special prominence about this time.

THE ISSUE OF TRADITION.

The point about which Jesus and the Pharisees were most at discord was in regard to the whole matter of ceremonial observances. To the Pharisees these overlayings of the reasonable ancient laws were everything; to Jesus they were nothing. One matter that they brought up for discussion was the "washings." Whenever the Pharisees sat down to a meal, or finished reading the Scripture in public, or started other tasks, they went through a formula of washing their hands, not to be clean, but in a peculiar ceremonial fashion. When a Pharisee did not wish to take too much trouble he might wash his hands "by intention" early in the morning, in advance for each possible defilement of the day. Jesus had positively ignored this custom, which had become so highly esteemed that the Pharisees would not eat with any man who did not observe it. They were aroused to bitter opposition by this attitude of Jesus and questioned Him regarding it. It was a little matter, but Jesus thought it might as well become an issue between them as any. He called the spectators to Him, while the attending Pharisees listened.

"This washing ceremony is to clean the hands which touch food, is it? But the food that enters a man's body does not go to his heart. It goes to his stomach. Not the food that comes into a man's stomach defiles a man, but the words that go out of his heart, and no 'washing' can cleanse these."

In another matter the Pharisees had allowed an outward



EASTERN HAND-WASHING.

form to become an act of meanness. This was in the matter of vows. Jesus showed how heartless this might become.

“One of you has vowed that all his property shall be dedicated to God. Then his father or his mother becomes poor, and is in suffering, but the son who out of anger or enthusiasm has made his vow says to them: ‘No! I cannot help you; my money is sacred.’ Is that the right way to keep the laws of your fathers?”

The Pharisees also observed two fast days each week, while Jesus permitted His disciples to ignore them.

You see how Jesus was standing for real righteousness and justice. It was a system against a man, and an iron-bound code vs. a life of compassion. The common people were ignorant and docile. They tried in a pitiful way to follow each fresh interpretation that made harder the ancient national laws, and the injustice of it all was that the scribes were all the time contriving substitutes and subterfuges whereby they themselves could be quite self-indulgent. This body of Pharisees which had once been the nation’s defense against political tyranny was now itself a spiritual tyranny.

But Jesus had not stopped at that point. Not only did He ignore the tradition that overlay the Law, but He even dared to contradict the sacred Torah itself. In the matter of the observance of the Sabbath, which was not only “the badge of the Jew,” but a matter of explicit direction in the Law, Jesus proclaimed His own lordship of that day. In all these radical positions Jesus was not a destroyer. Jesus claimed that the new Torah which He proclaimed for the Sabbath was diviner than the old. Fasts, He said, were not appropriate to the honeymoon days of the Kingdom; besides they did not fit into a system of free and joyous service of the Father, any more than a new piece of cloth does as a patch upon an old one or than fermenting wine does into old and cracked wineskins. As to the sacrifices, Jesus stood with the almost forgotten prophets as against the priestly party, that God wants mercy rather than sacrifice and righteousness rather than gifts of lambs and calves.

THE ISSUE OF RELATIONS WITH SINNERS.

Here too Jesus, not only in precept but in practice, was at complete odds with the Pharisees. They regarded themselves as ceremonially defiled when they had any physical

contact with unrighteous persons. As guardians of the orthodoxy of the nation, they were particularly careful not to have intercourse with those who had been expelled from the synagogue, or excommunicated, as we would say. These were cut off from all civil and ecclesiastical privileges as Jews. Rich or poor, they were "unclean."

On the other hand Jesus made it clear that He really wished to have this sort of people as His companions. "The Son of man is come to seek and save that which was lost." His mission was "to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." He was sent not to the well, but to the sick.

The result of Jesus' interest in these unchurched folks was unexpectedly encouraging. "All the tax-collectors and sinners used to come and associate with Him like friends. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured at it greatly, and said, 'This man receives sinners and eats with them!'" Even harder for them to understand than His religious tolerance was His genuine friendship for people who were not in polite society.

Among these outcasts two classes especially are often mentioned as having the courage to approach Jesus: tax-collectors and women of ill repute. That Jesus should not only form the acquaintance of tax-men, but should actually admit one of them to His inner circle, was a constant challenge to the intolerance of the Pharisees. The Gospel according to John relates the position which Jesus took when some of the Pharisees brought to His attention a woman whose sin had been most flagrant, and demanded that He coincide with the reiterated penalties laid down in the Law against such sin. "The Law deserves respect," was Jesus' verdict, "but which of you is worthy to throw the first stone at her!" None felt that he was so free from sin as to do this.

You see how Jesus was standing for the righteousness that is at the heart of all laws. The ancient code of Israel was perhaps more sacred to Him than to the Pharisees, for He often found unexpected truths and tendernesses in it, but it had no value for Him when it did not have a message for those who had failed in the true uses of life.

Jesus, as we have been saying, was on the side of the common people. The Pharisees claimed to be their teachers, but they were as fastidious as the high-caste people of India to-day in their fear of contact with what they called "the rabble." Jesus told a story in the presence of some of the Pharisees and

the multitude, to show how He believed God looks at this matter. Let us read it in our modern speech, and call it

THE STORY OF THE GOOD FATHER.

“Once there was a father who had two sons. The older one represents you Pharisees, the younger these people beside me. The younger son asked for his share of the property. So the father divided his property among them. A few days later this younger son gathered together all he had, and went away into a distant land; and there he squandered all his property foolishly.”

You can seem to see the Pharisees smiling proudly. Truly that was a good picture of the way the common people wasted their opportunities. But listen.

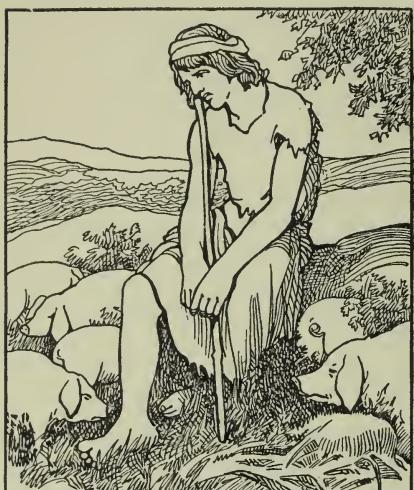
“When he had spent all he had, a fearful famine set in all over that country, and he began to be in sore want. He was reduced to be a slave to a farmer in that country, who sent him to take care of unclean swine. And his food was the same as theirs.”

The Pharisees nod their heads solemnly.

“But by and by, coming to his senses, he thought of his father. ‘Even his hired servants have more bread than they can eat, while I am here—dying of hunger. I will get up and go back to my father, and I will say to him, Father, I have done wrong against God and against you. I am no longer fit to be your son. Treat me as one of your servants.’”

You must imagine many of the people listening now with tears in their eyes. Such is their own pitiful situation. Oh, what can be the end of the story!

“So he got up and went back to his father. While he was perhaps hesitating to approach his old home, his father spied him, and his heart was touched. He ran—he threw his arms around his neck—he began to kiss him. The son began to say what he had intended, but before he had finished, the father cried out to his servants, ‘Be quick and fetch a robe—the best



THE LOST SON.



Copyright by J. J. Tissot.

Courtesy of the Tissot Picture Society.

THE RETURN OF THE PRODIGAL SON.

in the house—and put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and shoes for his feet; and bring the calf that we have been fattening and kill it, that we may eat and be joyful. For this is my son, who was dead, and has come to life again; he was lost and is found.' So they began merry-making."

Now Jesus turns directly to the Pharisees present.

"Meanwhile the older son (who represents you) was on the farm, but when he came home, after he got near the house, he heard music and dancing. So he called one of the servants and inquired what it meant. 'Your brother has come back,' answered the servant, 'and your father has killed the calf that has been fattening, because he has him back safe and sound.'

"This made him angry, and he would not go in.

"So his father came out, and urged him.

"'No,' he said, 'look at all the years I have been working like a slave without ever once disobeying your laws, and yet to me you have never given a kid so that I might make merry with my friends.'

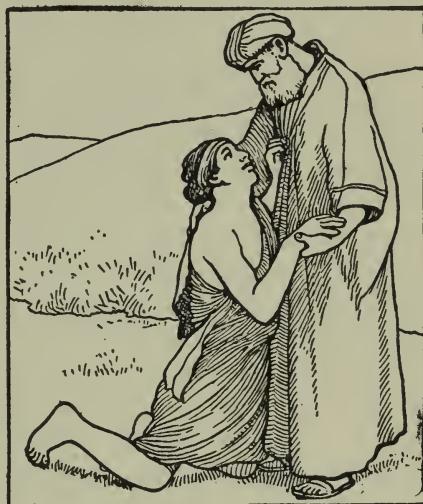
"'My child,' answered the father gently, 'you are always with me. Everything that is here is yours. We could not help making merry and being glad, for your brother was dead, and he has come to life again; he was lost and is found.'"

You see, Jesus was reminding his listeners that God is the Father of the foolish younger brother just as much as of the wise older one.

Then notice how the word "brother" is emphasized. The father says to the older one, not "This my son" but "this your brother" and even the servant reminds him that the one who has come home safe is his brother.

THOSE WHO WERE FOR JESUS.

These were the men who were against Jesus. Who was on His side? The people of His province disowned Him. His



THE PRODIGAL'S RETURN.

own relatives entirely misunderstood Him. There were a few Galileans who were faithful, and later we shall see how they stood by His side in His days of danger. But the circle of His influence was now narrowing to that of His twelve disciples. If we could look into their faces to-day, those men of stooped shoulders, hard, knotted hands and unenlightened countenances, we should feel a chill of despair in supposing that such men could be worthy to understand or hand down the message of the Master. One of them, at least Simon the Zealot, had been a member of the revolutionary party, and was, no doubt, bitterly disappointed that Jesus did not assume the political leadership of the people. Probably Judas Iscariot shared the same hopes. The rest of them were full-blooded Jews, strongly influenced by the teachings of the Pharisees, and they interpreted the ancient scriptures in accordance with the prejudices of their time. Through such men as these the cause of Jesus hereafter must endeavor to make its way.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

How did the Pharisees study Jesus?

How did Jesus differ from the Pharisees regarding the ceremonial washings?

What did He say to the people about this matter?

How did He differ from the Pharisees about the matter of consecrated gifts?

How did He disagree with them regarding personal relations with sinners?

Tell the story of the good father, showing as you do so, how it applied to the Pharisees and to the common people.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

The teacher will furnish a modern version of another parable of Jesus about the Pharisees which an assigned pupil will prepare to read aloud.

Find out something about the history of the Pharisees after the time of Jesus.

What people to-day represent the spirit of the Pharisees?

How may we resist the temptation of hypocrisy in our daily life?

Read to the class the hymn, "My God, I thank Thee, who hast made," by Adelaide A. Procter. Explain briefly how this states the forces for and against us, which correspond in many ways to those which were for and against Jesus.

Let three of the pupils take the characters of Peter, James and Judas, and prepare to conduct an imaginary dialogue, in which they shall hold a discussion, in view of the opposition of the Pharisees and the people, as to their future relations with Jesus.

WORK FOR ALL.

DEBATE. Is the fact that there are hypocrites in the church a valid reason for not becoming a church member?

CHAPTER XX.

THE MARTYRDOM OF A HERO.

The work of John: John 3:22-24.

John is imprisoned: Mark 6:17, 18.

John's friends visit Jesus: Matt. 11:2-30; Luke 7:19-50.

The death of John: Mark 6:14-29; Matt. 14:12.

John's later influence: Acts 18:24-28; 19:1-7.

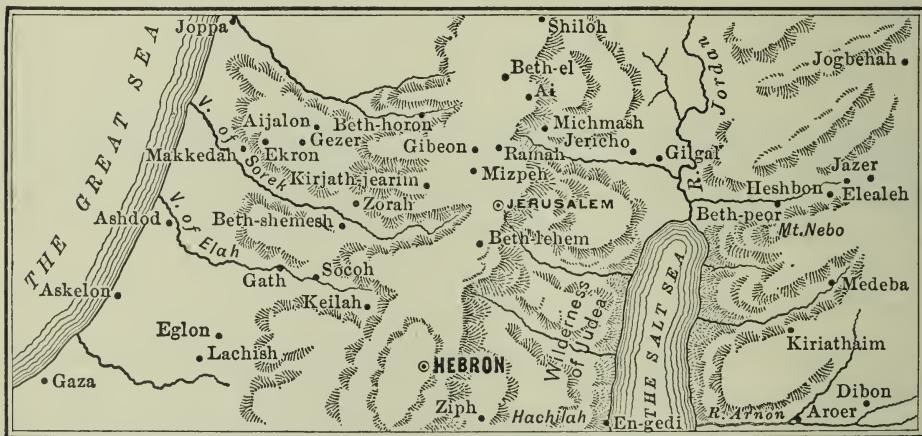
“From the time of John the Baptist till this very hour, the Kingdom of Heaven has been taken by force, and men of force have been seizing it.” Matthew 11:12 (Twentieth Century Version).

“He kept alive

The eternal fire; it may be not in vain. . . .
 Perchance some looked beyond him, and then first
 Beheld the glory, and what shrine it filled,
 And to what Spirit sacred: or perchance
 Some heard him chanting, though but to himself,
 The old heroic names: and went their way;
 And hummed his music on the march to death.”

—Henry Newbolt: The Non-Combatant.

The wily Herod Antipas had foreseen the political danger if John the Baptist should continue to stir up the people, and long



MAP OF CENTRAL PALESTINE.

This map is reproduced from our first lesson about John to remind us of the circumscribed region covered by his life. Hebron was traditionally his birthplace; the Wilderness of Judea was the place of his training; his preaching was near Jericho; Machærus was probably south-west of Medeba upon a bluff overlooking the Dead Sea.

before his disciples had developed organized strength to protect him, he shut him up in prison, leaving Jesus therefore to assume the leadership of this national movement alone.

Upon the highlands east of the Jordan in the country of Moab, overlooking the scenes of his short triumph, John had been placed in the fortress castle of Antipas, who was the ruler of Galilee and Perea. Antipas was the son of Herod the Great, and although he was not so vigorous as his masterly father he was as shrewd. Jesus once accurately described him as a "fox." He rightly saw that he could not venture to leave at large a man who had such power over great multitudes of his subjects, if his own reign was to be undisputed. But neither dared he kill him, for fear of the people.



JOHN THE BAPTIST IN PRISON.

Herod seems to have felt no enmity toward John. One of the Gospels tells us that he enjoyed talking with him, and it suggests that the tremendous personality of John secured great influence over him. "He did many things" because of him, say some of the ancient manuscripts. John had access to his own friends, and at this point in the story he sent some of them with a message to Jesus.

THE THOUGHTS OF JOHN IN PRISON.

You are to think of John in prison as being like a wild beast in a cage. Always an outdoor man, he had little use even for the indoor luxuries of a court and no mind at all to be shut up within stone walls. It was doubly hard for a man who had swayed thousands to have no companions but his jailers, a few friends and the weak and insincere half-Jew, Herod Antipas. Was he not often tempted to think his life a failure, and to wonder at the providence that had cut off his usefulness in the strength of his days? A life in shackles was far from the ideal of one who wanted to level mountains and fill up valleys for the sake of the coming Israelite kingdom. But his was a soldier's heart, and when he could no longer live on the firing line himself, he remembered that there was another who was free. What was Jesus doing? Was He fulfilling the promise of His youth? Was Jesus true to the message? John had probably heard

broken accounts of Jesus' work in Galilee, accounts which had gratified him for they indicated that his early supporter had developed unusual power. But was He in line with John's own hopes? Was He laying his axe at the root of the tree and cutting down the sinners who cumbered the ground? Was He winnowing out the souls of men and gathering the wheat, and preparing the chaff for the burning?

JOHN'S QUESTION.

The particular question which John sent his friends to ask Jesus was a startling one, "Are you the One that was to come or must we look for another?"

It is somewhat difficult for us to know just what John meant by this. So far as our information goes it is not certain that John had proclaimed the coming of the Messiah; he seems rather to have looked forward to the intervention of God himself. It was He for whom he believed himself to be the royal road-maker. John held that the kingdom was coming after God had personally appeared to judge His people. John's question sounds almost as if it referred to some secret conversation which he may have had with Jesus before his arrest.

"Are you taking up my work? Are you the Elijah whom God has given to take my place? Are you true to the commission?" This is perhaps the meaning of the challenge of the fiery prisoner.

THE ANSWER OF JESUS.

Jesus made no immediate answer. The day passed as usual. Jesus went on teaching those who gathered around Him. He ministered to the sick and troubled. It is in close connection with the story of this day that the Gospel according to Matthew quotes a saying of Jesus which has meant more of comfort to the distressed of earth than any other that He ever spoke. It may not have been spoken at just this time. It may have been spoken many times. But it so completely states the character of Jesus' personal influence that we may place it here:

"Come unto me, all you that are weary and heavy laden,
And I will refresh you.
Fit my yoke unto you and learn of me,
For I am meek and lowly of heart,
And you shall find rest unto your souls.
For my yoke is easy
And my burden is light."

And the Gospel of Matthew tells us that it was upon this day also, and perhaps at this very moment, that He lifted His eyes in prayer and thanked the Father that children could now know what the wise and understanding had never before been able to find out.

When evening came, it was time for John's comrades to start home. Jesus called them to Him, and said: "Go and give your report to John of what you have heard and seen. The blind of heart are getting their sight, the lame of heart are walking, the deaf of heart are getting their hearing, and the dead of heart are being raised to life, and the Good News is being told to the poor. Happy is the man who will believe in Me!"

The evangelists also tell us that it was upon this same occasion that Jesus spoke those generous words about the undaunted desert preacher, which we may perhaps render as follows: "He is greater than any prophet! He is greater than any man who ever lived! Yet—because he came before the days of the kingdom—he that is lesser in the kingdom has greater opportunity than he."

THE CHALLENGE TO JOHN.

We do not know how John received this message and report. This was not the kind of Elijah he had been dreaming of. Instead of the axe and the winnowing fan and the fire for sinners, here was one who was kind to the most sinful. In place of fasting and ceremonies of penitence, this man was happy at men's feasts. And instead of cutting a royal road for a Deliverer, he was helping the lame to their feet and giving an easy yoke to the burdened. But what was that last word of Jesus? "Happy is the man who will believe in Me!" It was as though Jesus assumed the command, and asked John to be patient and obey. John had a soldier's heart. We do not know, but we like to think that, even if he could not understand, he could be loyal.

THE MARTYRDOM.

The story comes to a sudden climax. Herod Antipas was an adulterer. He had met in Rome his brother's wife, and, without taking the trouble to divorce his own wife, he had married her. This sort of thing was done every day in dissolute Rome, but it was an offense beyond all others to the

Jews. "It is a sin for you to have her!" the prisoner John had stoutly told his royal jailer. We do not know how the guilty man received this fearless rebuke, but it made the woman his mortal enemy. Herodias was of this same sin-stained family, for she was Antipas' niece as well as his wife. If he was a fox, she was a tigress. Her plot was heartless but sure. Antipas would not dare deliberately to kill John, but according to the story in Mark's Gospel, she was able to trick him into doing it.

At a great feast when many Jewish men of wealth were shaming their national ideals by being guests at an enemy's table, she brought forward her daughter Salome to entertain the company. High born though she was, this shameless woman imitated the coarse dances of the paid performers at Roman courts, and the king, perhaps half intoxicated, was so enraptured that he rose to his feet and cried aloud that she must ask any present in his power, as a reward for her skill.

The trap was instantly snapped. "Give me John's head, here, on a silver platter," she replied.

The king had passed his word. Nobody was present who would befriend the prisoner. He forgot caution, and yielded to the woman who had proven stronger and more shrewd than himself, and soon the hideous trophy was laid at the heartless woman's feet.

Herod did not live on without retribution. The ghost of John seemed to haunt him, and when he heard months later of Jesus it seemed to him as though the resurrected John was abroad through the land, gathering a new popular uprising against him. His own neglected wife brought her father's army against him and he was vanquished. Far off in Lyons, France, he spent his last broken days as an uncrowned exile.

QUESTIONS.

- To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

In order to recollect what we have already learned about John, tell something about the Essenes, among whom he probably received his training.

• What were John's costume and food?

What, in a word, was his teaching?

Tell the advice which he gave to the tax-gatherers; to the soldiers.

Why did Herod Antipas imprison John?

Why would it be especially hard for a man like John to suffer imprisonment?

What question did John send to Jesus by his messengers?

Why did he ask this question?

What was the occasion of the death of John the Baptist?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Find out all that is known about Herod Antipas.

Put in words the feelings of John after he had been several months in prison.

What do you think was John's exact opinion of Jesus?

How do you think John received the message which Jesus sent him?

CHAPTER XXI.

JESUS SHARING WITH THE MULTITUDE.

Jesus seeks retirement after John's death: Mark 6:30-32.

He ministers to a gathered multitude: Mark 6:33-44; John 6: 30-34, 41-51.

Ancient prototypes of this event: 2 Kings 4:42-44; Exodus 16: 14-35.

He refuses a crown: John 6:14, 15.

Again He retires: Mark 6:45, 46.

He resumes His work beside the lake: Mark 6:54-56.

"They have no need to go away. . . . Bring them hither to me. And he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitude." Matt. 14:16, 18, 19, 20.

"My brother wants communion more than bread. He can get bread in the villages as the result of daily toil; but that is not communion bread; it is not accompanied by a human hand."

—George Matheson: *Studies of the Portrait of Christ.*

RESULTS OF JOHN'S DEATH.

The death of John the Baptist came at the apparent height of Jesus' popularity.

It cast the shadow of an approaching change.

As long as John was in prison, the very fact that Herod did not dare to take his life was a testimony to the power of the popular movement which John had begun and which Jesus was now leading. His strong and picturesque character, while it survived, was a challenge to courage on the part of his friends. But if his death should be unavenged, what might prevent Herod, whose domain was Galilee as well as Perea, from laying his hand upon Jesus and His followers?

The shock of this sudden catastrophe, the need of forethought as to the future, the personal bereavement, caused

Jesus to feel the need of quiet both for Himself and His friends.

“Come,” He said, “let us get away early, to some lonely spot by ourselves, and rest awhile.”

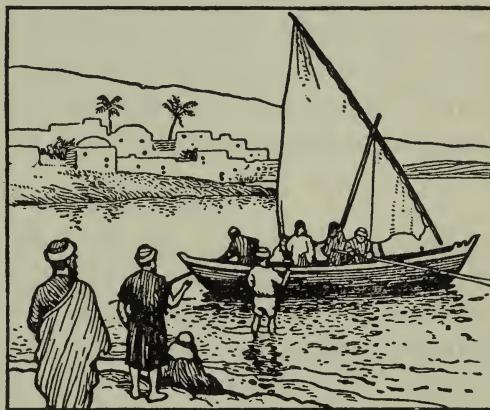
THE DAY BESIDE THE LAKE.

There were perhaps fourteen in the party that left Capernaum. Beside Jesus and the Twelve there may have been a boy, the lad to whom John refers in his account of the events; he may have been Peter’s son. With the lad perhaps at the tiller and Jesus on the seat beside him they made the short journey to the southwest shore in an hour. But the people were before them. It was probably Passover time and many were on the road to Jerusalem. These caravans along the lakeside road added themselves to the people of the neighboring villages who heard of Jesus’ coming and filled the strand before His boat drew up. Within the morning hours one of the largest companies which Jesus had ever met surrounded Him. He at once gave up His promised rest, and devoted Himself to their needs.

It was almost a national gathering, and appropriately the Gospel according to Luke tells us that “he taught them concerning the kingdom of God.” Toward night the great company sat down to dinner on the slope overlooking the lake, looking, so the account in Mark tells us, in their many colored garments, against the background of the grass, like great flower beds.

JESUS SHARING.

Jesus Himself had an important part in helping to furnish the multitude with food for this lakeside supper. It seems indeed a parable of His whole Galilean ministry, now drawing to a close. From the slenderest of resources Jesus satisfied the multitude. Without wealth, name or title, without a patron or an influential friend, Jesus, blest by God, fed the hearts of men.



JESUS AND THE DISCIPLES SETTING SAIL.

Furthermore this is the memorable fact: upon this national anniversary, where a throng national in character was gathered, the outstanding leader of the nation (now that John was gone) engaged in an act by which He taught the method of the Kingdom of God. It is a kingdom of brotherhood. The Master shared with the disciples, the Twelve shared with their neighbors, and these with theirs, clear to the outskirts of the throng. Not only were all fed, but all helped. Each one received not merely bread but also the helpful hand of his brother. The precise source of the food is unimportant, if only we know this, that it was a communion feast of brothers.

THE OFFER OF THE CROWN.

The day closed in the greatest excitement. The enthusiasm of the happy, united throng was contagious. The martyrdom of John had stirred their patriotic feelings to the utmost. Who should avenge his death but his old comrade and co-worker, Jesus? When would be a better time to arise than now, at the national anniversary, when Herod's murder of John was the challenge to the nation either to demand revenge or forever remain supine? And when better could this Jesus, who had won such power over them without ever breaking silence as to His real purpose and aims for the nation, declare Himself than now, when all were expectant? There was also the element of affection. As we have seen, the disciples were first won to Jesus, without any real understanding of Him, purely on the basis of personal friendship. Scores of poor and sick people owed their happiness and their very lives to Him. His contagious graciousness had won Him hosts of affectionate comrades. He had in His hands the keys to power, and if ever the voice spoke again, which in His earliest manhood told Him that He could lead a successful rebellion, it must have spoken now. And the urgency of the voice was that it was now or never. If He did not grasp, at this time, the reins of power, there would never again be so good an opportunity.

But Jesus had decided this question once for all. It would be popular indeed to be a Bread-King. Jesus knew the pathetic longings of these folk, poor, misgoverned and well nigh hopeless, to be part of a new Israel in which they should have no more work, no more poverty and no more taxes. But the way to such a future was a path deep in blood. When He should have established Himself as military conqueror, He would rule over

a people who at their best had proven entirely unfit for self government and who were less fitted for such a task than ever. His selfish domain would probably crumble at the first shock, and its people would have risen against Him as soon as He had disappointed their most foolish wish.

Jesus, however, had chosen His calling. He had determined not to be the petty monarch of a Jewish domain. He had a message for the world, a word that could be only spoken in His own short life, which must sink into the soil and wait for centuries for its growth, but which should bear fruit to feed the whole world.

This word was as to the kingdom of brotherhood. The heart of the story of the feeding of the five thousand is this saying of Jesus: "They need not go away. Bring them to me." When Jesus stood, with His twelve about Him, sharing food with them, which each in turn shared with his next neighbor until all were fed, that was a picture of Jesus' kingdom of brotherhood: this, and not conquest or political revolution, was the spirit of its Master, the method of its life.

THE DEPARTURE OF THE MULTITUDE.

The greatness of Jesus is seen that day not merely in His abnegation, but in the skilful manner in which He handled a dangerous situation. His disciples were as much carried away as were the crowd by the excitement of thinking their hopes were at once to be gratified. They might easily commit Him by some act of folly to a position which He could not countenance. With instant authority He sent them to help in the dispersal of the multitude, and when they returned to find Him, He had vanished. Bewildered, they sailed home in the darkness, while Jesus on the lonely hillside renewed in prayer His poise and self mastery.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What effect did the death of John have upon the work of Jesus?

How did Jesus spend the day among the multitude?

What national feast was at that time approaching?

How did Jesus interest Himself in the physical needs of the multitude?

What was the method of distributing the food?

What temptation came to Jesus that day?

What did He do to resist it?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Give an imaginative account of what might have happened if Jesus had accepted the Jewish crown.

Tell the story found in the ancient Hebrew writings about another occasion when the gathered people were fed. (Exodus 16: 1-18.)

How was the method of distributing the food in anticipation of the methods of modern philanthropy? (Illustrate from famine relief work, from the distribution of local charities, or from the method of educating skilled charity experts.)

What does the hymn, "O Love divine that stooped to share," by Oliver Wendell Holmes, say is the reason that we find comfort in the love of Jesus?

WORK FOR ALL.

Round Table Discussion. When is it wise to give direct financial help to people who are in need? What other methods of help are available?

CHAPTER XXII.

THE BREAK WITH THE PHARISEES.

Jesus examined by a delegation of Pharisees from Jerusalem:
Mark 3: 22-27; Matt. 16: 1-3; Luke 11: 29-32.

Jesus' denunciation of the Pharisees: Luke 11: 37-52; Matt. 23: 1-35.

The condemnation of Jesus by the Pharisees: Luke 11: 53, 54;
Mark 3: 6.

The rejection of Jesus at Capernaum: John 6: 26, 41, 66.

The attitude of the disciples: John 6: 66-69.

"O Power, more near my life than life itself . . .
If sometimes I must hear good men debate
Of other witness of Thyself than Thou,
As if there needed any help of ours
To nurse Thy flickering life, that else must cease,
My soul shall not be taken in their snare,
To change her inward surety for their doubt
Muffled from sight in formal robes of proof;
While she can only feel herself through Thee.
I fear not Thy withdrawal; more I fear,
Seeing to know Thee not, hoodwinked with dreams
Of signs and wonders, while, unnoticed, Thou,
Walking Thy garden still, commun'st with men,
Missed in the commonplace of miracle."

—Lowell: The Cathedral.

Up to this time the contact of Jesus with the Pharisees had been with individuals, but now His work had assumed such proportions as to demand official inquiry, and a delegation was sent down from Jerusalem to examine Him.

"When is the Kingdom of heaven, which you teach, coming?" was probably their first question of Jesus.

"The Kingdom of God," replied Jesus, "comes in no visible form, and no one can say 'See! here it is'; or, 'See! there it is!' for behold, the Kingdom of God is in the midst of you."

But as the Pharisees could imagine no "coming" except the celestial and marvellous appearing of their Messiah, they persisted: "But if the Kingdom is at hand, show us at least one of the signs of its coming."

"Do you want a sign in the sky?" asked Jesus, bitterly. "When the sky is red at evening, you say, 'That is a sign that it will be fine tomorrow!' If it is red in the morning, you say, 'It will be stormy to-day.' You know well enough how to read the signs of the sky; why can you not read the signs of the times?"

By this answer probably Jesus referred to the deep spiritual hunger which He had met on every hand, the works of the Kingdom which everywhere beckoned to be done, and the response of the few who had already enlisted in the service of the Kingdom.

Perhaps on the same occasion, when the Pharisees persisted in their demand for a sign, Jesus replied, "An evil and unfaithful generation is seeking after a sign; and no sign shall be given to it, but the sign of Jonah." By this He meant that just as the preaching of Jonah had converted the Ninevites, in spite of the fact that Jonah had performed no miracles, so His life and teaching should convince the Jews, without any additional marvels or signs.

There was indeed one "sign" which the Pharisees could not ignore, the merciful deeds of Jesus in healing the sick. This they did not recognize as a Messianic sign for they had anticipated that the Messiah would show His power in overwhelming the heathen rather than in strengthening the weak. They had evidently not read that great chapter in their own prophets (Ezekiel 34), where God rebukes His shepherds for their neglect of the sick and broken, and promises that He Himself will become the searching and healing Shepherd of His forgotten. These deeds of Jesus, however, required explanation, and it was easily found in their own system of thought. When an unexplainable event did not come as the result of the intervention of God from above, it must come from the Powers beneath, and to these demonic forces they ascribed the merciful acts of Jesus. "That Kingdom," replied Jesus, perhaps with a touch

of sarcasm, "is not likely thus to be divided against itself. For how can Satan cast out Satan?"

THE GREAT DENUNCIATION.

It is at this time, according to Luke, that Jesus delivered the magnificent address which has been called "The Great Denunciation." The situation could no longer be covered up with gentle words. The people must choose between Him and the Pharisees. In some public place, "in the hearing of all the people," Jesus boldly called by name the hollow hypocrisies and the meaningless ceremonials by which these pretenders to religion deceived both themselves and the people. In two different connections and in somewhat different language the Gospels give us portions of what must be considered as one of the world's great orations, an address in which biting sarcasm and searching analysis and immeasurable pity are mingled as Jesus held up for future generations His portrait of the hypocrite in religion.

JESUS DRIVEN FROM GALILEE.

But the populace were not ready for their Liberator. The enshackling requirements of the Pharisees had become an accepted habit, and the authority which this impressive delegation from the capital represented was too real to be gainsaid. The Capernaum people yielded to the verdict of their religious oligarchy.

We do not know in just what terms the decision against Jesus was stated. The Fourth Gospel, which seems to have access to fresh sources, connects the rejection of Jesus closely with the feeding of the five thousand. That immense congregation of people had apparently been the occasion of the coming of the delegation from Jerusalem, and the refusal of Jesus to work a "sign" of His Messiahship immediately afterward was the signal for His expulsion.

The decision probably took the form of a kind of excommunication, and thenceforth Jesus was an unchurched Israelite. But it was more. Even an ostracised Jew could not be permitted to have such influence as Jesus was wielding. A longer stay in Capernaum was made impossible for Jesus and His disciples, and He was driven forth as an exile. Some have thought that the intention of the Pharisees was to force Jesus into Judea, where He would be more easily in their power.

What was the attitude of the disciples of Jesus after He had

been disowned by the Pharisees? The Gospel of John says that "upon this many of the disciples went back, and walked no more with him." It also adds Simon's word of pathetic loyalty: "Lord, to whom else shall we go? It is you who have the words of eternal life." Simon and the Twelve were bewildered to find that their Teacher was unacceptable to the teachers of their race, but what could they do? They could not go back to them and to bondage. They must go forward, on with Jesus, even if in darkness!

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

How did the Pharisees examine Jesus?

What demand did they make of Him?

What kind of "signs" did they expect of Him? What was Jesus' reply? What did He mean?

What did He mean on another occasion when He said they should have "the sign of Jonah"?

How did they explain away His acts of healing?

What response did Jesus make to this explanation?

Of what specific things did Jesus accuse the Pharisees in the Great Denunciation?

What was the result of this examination?

What attitude did the disciples take toward Jesus when He was exiled?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Read by yourself one version of the Great Denunciation in the New Century edition so as to read it effectively to the whole class.

Put the Great Denunciation into modern language, making it apply to some Pharisaic hypocrisy of our own time.

Is there any tendency toward snobbishness in our high-school life? If so, describe it, and bring out its parallelism with Pharisaism.

If you had been brought up among petty thieves, would you be likely to be honest? Answering this question frankly, what attitude, which we commonly take to our own virtues, is dangerously like that of the Pharisees?

Put down in fifty words the probable result upon one's future character if he yields in youth to Pharisaic temptations.

CHAPTER XXIII.

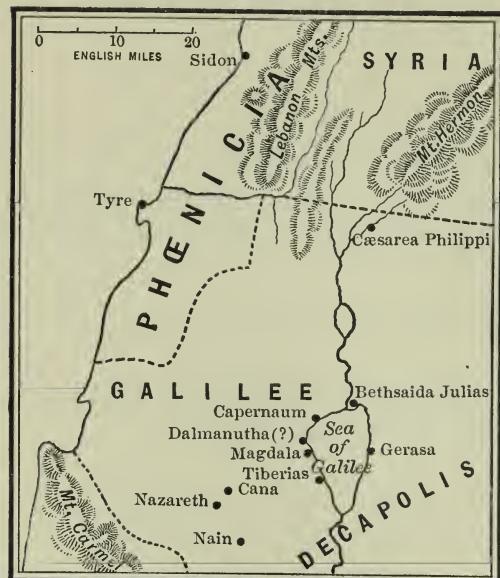
JESUS AMONG A FOREIGN PEOPLE.

Jesus in the region of Tyre and Sidon: Mark 7: 24-30.

Peter's confession: Mark 8: 31-39; Matt. 16: 17-20.

FOREIGN TRAVEL.

After Jesus had been rejected by the Galileans, at the instigation of the Pharisees, He decided to take the disciples away by themselves into a foreign country for a number of months, in order that He might thoroughly train them in the message of the Kingdom. He wished to fit them both to understand it and be able to teach it, if He Himself should finally be overwhelmed by the rising enmity of the religious leaders of Israel. Unwilling to meet His foes upon their own ground in Judea until this preparation should be complete and desirous also to avoid the dangerous suspicions of Herod, who already identified Him with the martyred John, Jesus



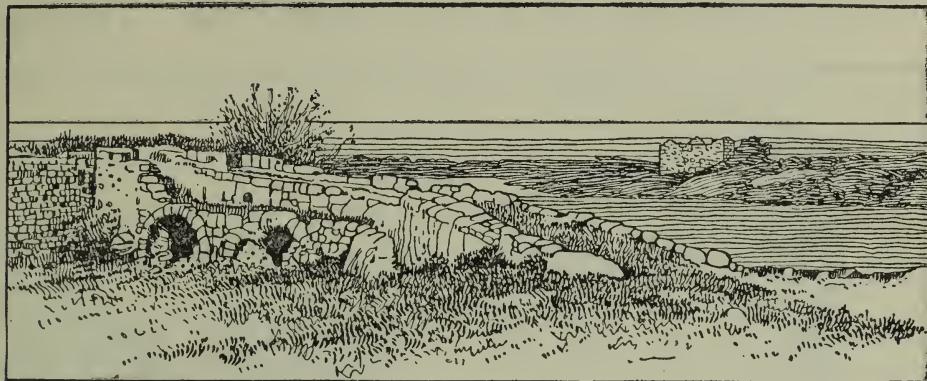
MAP OF NORTHERN PALESTINE.

surprised His friends by asking them to fill their haversacks for a long journey, and turned their footsteps away from the confines of their native land.

Jesus led His companions northwestward into the mountains of upper Galilee. Day by day they went further from home and finally passed the boundary line of their own country, and were over in Phoenicia. The summer heat which dries the springtime grass was coming on, but it was cool on the wind-swept tablelands and in the shadowed ravines. They probably covered two hundred miles that summer.

They may have visited both Tyre and Sidon, the magnificent capitals of the heroic race which had swept over all seas and touched every shore. Upon the quays of Tyre, among the

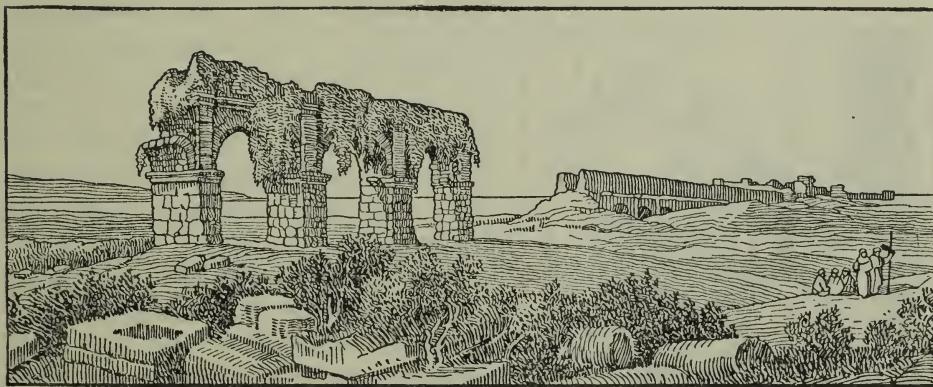
crowded bales and heaps of merchandise, Jesus and His companions came face to face with black Moors, tawny Egyptians and dark-eyed Spaniards. They traversed the cliffs of Sidon,



OLD TYRE.

From a photograph.

and beyond its temples and royal tombs, its groves and gardens, they saw the blue sea, the barrier, not the highway, of their nation. The Jews are not sailors, but these fishermen may have found excitement in listening to the sailors who told them fascinating tales of the sights in far-off lands. Jesus wished them to forget the disappointments of Galilee and to listen with sympathy, and even with admiration, to the thoughts of other races. It may have been somewhat startling to these exclusive

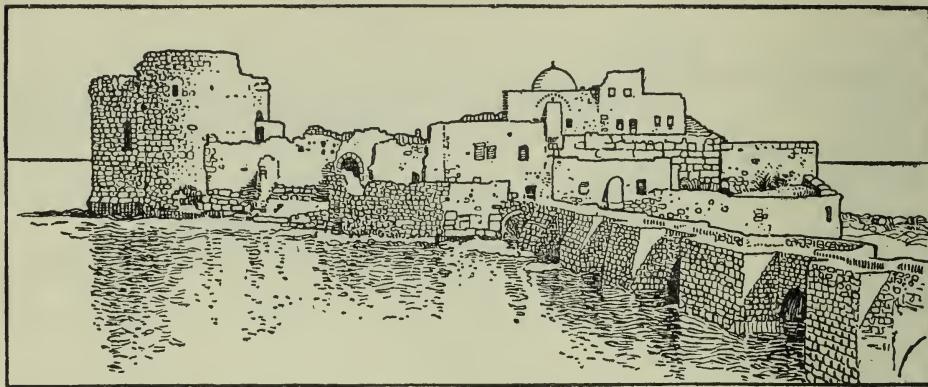


RUINED AQUEDUCT AT TYRE.

Jewish men to find out that these Syrians ridiculed their race for its baseless pride of superiority and its isolation from other peoples.

JESUS AND FOREIGNERS.

Jesus was probably not very successful, however, in developing a sense of fellowship between His followers and the strangers whom they met in these seaport cities. The Jews



From a photograph.

OLD CASTLE AT SIDON.

applied the coarse epithet "dogs" to all foreigners. Perhaps some special displeasure of the Twelve at the willingness of Jesus to teach some of these Tyrians led to the incident which took place at this time.

One day there came to His Tyrian lodging-house a woman who sought relief for her little daughter, who was deranged.

She was of the old aboriginal Canaanite stock that had settled in the land before the Jews, just as the Indians did in our own country. Jesus determined to let this opportunity be a test of the human sympathy of His friends.

Matthew seems to represent her as making her first appeal a shrewd reminder of the old friendly relations between king David and her ancestral monarch, king Hiram.

"Have pity, O Son of David!" she cried.

But Jesus deliberately turned



JESUS AND THE SYROPHœNICIAN WOMAN.

away and went out of the house. The poor woman followed Him, begging for help. Jesus waited to see if the disciples would intervene in her behalf, but no, they were pleased that He ignored her and perhaps even urged that He should send her away.

“Lord, help me!” she cried out in despair.

“I have been sent,” He said, turning to her, “only to the wandering sheep of Israel’s fold. Let the children have enough first, for it is not fair to take the children’s loaf and cast it to the household puppies.” Do you suppose there was a twinkle in His eye as He said this, or did she notice that He did not speak of her as one of the homeless street dogs, but as the pets which the Tyrians kept in their houses?

With quick-witted shrewdness she responded: “Yes, Master, but the puppies often feed off the scraps that fall from their owner’s table!”

Was not that a keen answer? “Dogs” her people might be, but God was their maker and the owner of them all.

“Well said!” cried Jesus, with hearty pleasure. “What splendid faith! Let it be even as you will. Go home. Your little daughter shall be well.”

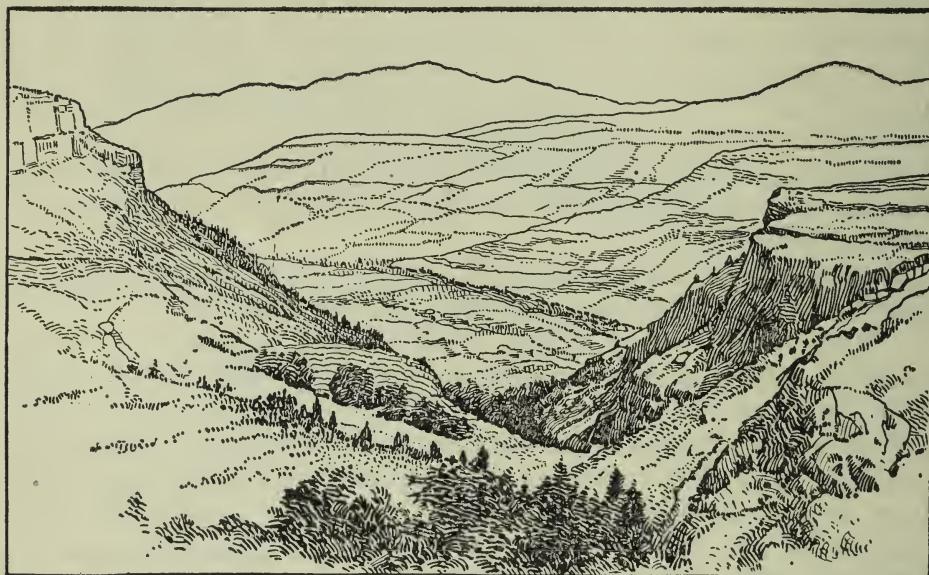
It is interesting to remember that the only other time Jesus had ever been able to use such warm terms of praise was a few days before in Capernaum and to another foreigner. The captain of the Roman city guard, who had built the synagogue for the Jews, had been in need of help for his man-servant. In this case even the Jews interceded in his behalf, because of his benevolences to them. Jesus started at once to the man’s home, but when He was close by, the officer sent one of his own friends with another message. “Sir,” he said, “I am not of enough importance to have you come beneath my roof; that indeed is the reason why I did not come to you. Just say the word and the boy will get well. For I know how it is myself; I, too, am under orders, and I have soldiers under me, and if I say to



JESUS AND THE NOBLEMAN.

one 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Do this,' he does it." It was then that Jesus again exclaimed, "Splendid faith! Never in any Israelite have I seen faith like this."

Do you see Jesus standing on the cliffs of Tyre upon a summer evening, looking across the great sea toward the lands beyond, which He should never visit, and murmuring to Himself what He said in Capernaum, concerning that Roman captain? "Many shall come from the West as well as from the



VIEW IN THE LEBANON MOUNTAINS.

From a photograph.

During His first northern journey Jesus and His disciples probably spent considerable time in the region of these mountains.

East and take their place at table beside Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of Heaven, while the heirs of Heaven will be banished into the darkness outside."

Such were the men whom Jesus might have had as followers. As He looked toward Greece and Rome that day, was He tempted to leave His own bigoted countrymen and carry His gospel Himself to the outer world that needed Him and that seemed so ready to welcome Him?

JESUS TRUE TO HIS PEOPLE.

It has been said that Jesus was no patriot. His next action is the best answer. He deliberately turned His back upon what-

ever opportunities there were in other lands and returned to His own country. He would not desert His race. He led His friends eastward through the deep gorge of the Leontes river, up over the sunny range of the Lebanon, to where on some golden autumn day they looked down the long eastern slopes to Damascus, the treasure city of the East. But even from this earthly Paradise Jesus turned to His own people.

With garments faded and torn, with bodies hardened by exposure and exercise, but refreshed and invigorated by these wholesome methods of outdoor life, the Disciples hastened homeward. Understanding more deeply some of the Master's ideals, though not yet in sympathy with His interest in foreigners, they returned with Jesus in the autumn to Capernaum.

PETER'S CONFESSION.

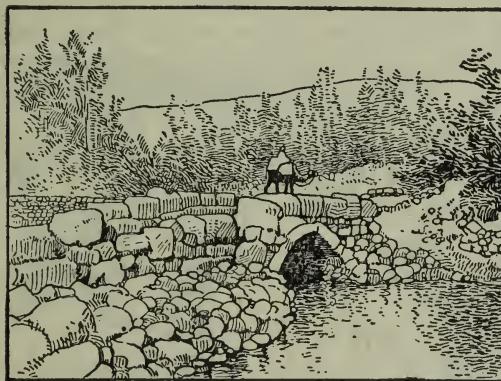
When Jesus and His friends reached Capernaum they found the city all in turmoil against them. The Galileans were a

passionate people, and, like His old neighbors at Nazareth, they could not remain merely neutral. If they would not take Jesus as their leader, they would be His inveterate foes. There was no longer safety of life for Him in His home, and only once again after this departure was He seen in the streets of Capernaum.

This time they went directly north about fifty miles to Cæsarea Philippi, the northern capital which Herod Philip had rebuilt upon the very shoulder of lofty Mount Hermon. They were all seated one day by the roadside, perhaps just



CEDARS OF LEBANON.



ON THE ROAD TO CÆSAREA PHILIPPI.

after the common meal. Jesus had been waiting all through these months of adventure and experience to ask one question, the most important one which He could possibly ask.

“Who do people say that I am?” was His approach to the question. They had heard this question often before, though never from the lips of Jesus. You know, it is usually easy enough to say who a man is. If any one asked them who Herod Philip was, anybody would have said, He is the ruler of Iturea. Who is Simon Peter? A fisherman of Galilee. Who is Matthew? One who was recently the tax gatherer of the Plain of Gennesaret.

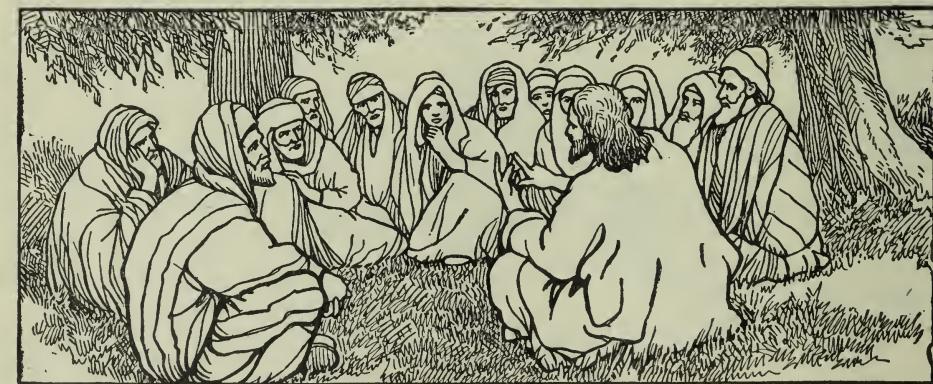
But who is Jesus? The Twelve reported what people were saying. “Some say, John the Baptist.” “Some say, Elijah.”

“And some say, Jeremiah.”

“And others say, Some other of the ancient prophets come back again.”

“But who do you say that I am?”

Was there a long pause before any reply came? Had they wrestled together about this during the days since they had



JESUS TALKING WITH HIS DISCIPLES.

first known Jesus? What should they say of One who had become their hero and cherished friend, and yet who daily dis-

appointed them by His interest in foreigners, His sympathy with outcasts, His contempt of their childhood teachers? Whom should they call this man of prayer who seldom prayed in public, this healer of disease who yet never allowed any one to boast of His cures, this teacher of religion who was being disowned by their religious leaders and their old neighbors? The prophets had told of a coming deliverer, yet was Jesus' way going to lead to deliverance? But the one subject of His teaching was the same as theirs, the Kingdom of God. What Israel hoped and agonized for Jesus loved with all His heart, the return of the Kingdom to Israel. And so, although none of them saw how Jesus' way could possibly be in harmony with their hopes, there was at least one man among them who loved and trusted Him so much that he uttered aloud what had for many centuries been only the whisper of a nation's hope:

“You are the Messiah, the anointed of the Eternal!”

Jesus grasped him eagerly by the hand. He had found one man who had begun to understand Him.

“Blessed art thou, Simon, son of John,” he exclaimed. “You did not get this from men. This has come to you from my heavenly Father. And let me tell you who you are: you are the man like rock (the word Peter means rock), and upon such rock (he is speaking like a carpenter, and pointing perhaps to the cornerstone of a wayside shrine) I will build my church, and the Powers of Death shall never overcome it!”

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

How did the people of Capernaum feel toward Jesus after His refusal to accept the crown?

What was the attitude of His twelve disciples?

Where did He take His friends with Him? Why?

What cities may He have visited?

What was the attitude of the Twelve toward people of foreign races?

What was the attitude of Jesus?

Tell the story of the Tyrian woman.

Just what lesson did Jesus teach His disciples by His conversation with her?

Just what did He teach the woman?

What question did Jesus ask His disciples on the way to Cæsarea Philippi?

What theories were currently held as to the correct reply?

What answer did Simon Peter make?

What was the meaning of Jesus' praise of Peter for giving this reply?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Find out all you can about the Phœnicians and the Syro-Phœnicians.

Suppose Jesus had met a cultured Greek in Sidon, put in your own words the impression that you think Jesus would have made upon him. (If it is accessible, use Browning's poem, "An Epistle of Karshish," to help you.)

What would be Jesus' opinion of those we call "dagoes" and how would He treat them if He were living in America to-day? (Suggest to the class their virtues, artistic instincts and musical taste, and what they are capable of contributing to our national life.)

When did you ever get a lesson in racial tolerance? What was it?

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE SOURCE OF JESUS' COURAGE.

Jesus foretells His death: Mark 8:31; 9:1, 30-32.

The mountain vision: Mark 9:2-13.

Malachi's anticipation of the reappearance of Moses and Elijah: Mal. 4: 4-6.

The healing at the foot of the mountain: Mark 9: 14-29.

We do not know all of the conversation which ensued, in that quiet place, between Jesus and His friends. It seems likely that it continued in the direction in which it had begun. Perhaps Jesus propounded a question something like this: What did "Moses" (the Law) say about the truths which I have been teaching you? What would "Elijah" (the Prophets) think about our work of ministry together? What would these olden teachers say if they could know that the work which I am doing can have but one end,—my own rejection and death?

JESUS FORETELLS HIS DEATH.

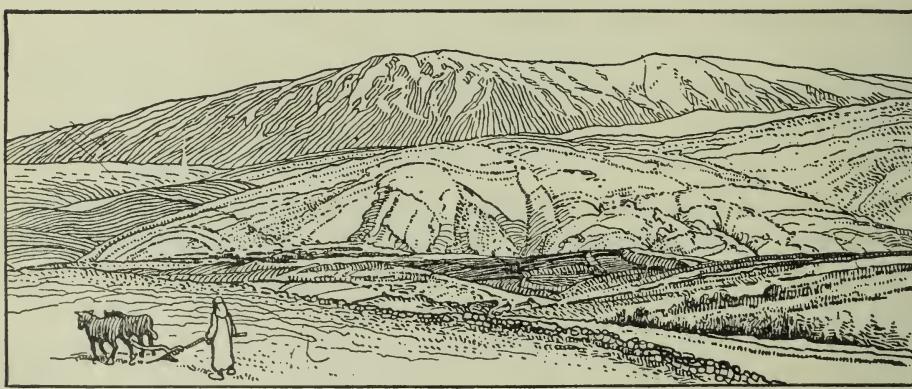
It was at this point that Jesus broke to His dearest friends the news for which He had again led them into solitude. The

attitude of His own city toward Him had removed all doubt from His mind as to what further was in store for Him from His enemies. If they had improved even His absence further to embitter His neighbors against Him, at what would they stop when He should present His message to the nation at Jerusalem? He therefore plainly told the Twelve that He was planning to go to Jerusalem, but that He had no expectation but that His enemies would meet His coming with the endeavor to kill Him, and in this He believed that they would be successful.

Jesus however would not leave His friends under this shock of surprise without some relief. "But," He added immediately, "some of you who stand here will certainly not die until you have seen God's Kingdom come into power."

It was at this point that the impetuous Peter exclaimed, "God forbid, Master! This shall never be your fate." Weakness of soul is not to be borne even from one's staunchest friends. Jesus swung Peter's hand from his shoulder and, turning, flashed upon him this sentence, "Out of My way, tempter! Now you are a stumbling stone to Me. You look at things in man's way, not in God's." Then he turned to the others and said sternly, "If a man wishes to go always where I go, he must deny self and take up his cross every day and follow Me."

The word "cross" is now the hallowed symbol of our religion.



From a photograph.

MOUNT HERMON, THE PROBABLE SCENE OF THE TRANSFIGURATION.

Then it was the punishment used only by the Roman tyrants for the most shameful crimes. This terrible sentence was as if Jesus had said, "If you follow Me you must walk behind Me on the way to the gallows."

It was in preparation for such a future that Jesus left nine of

the twelve in a village at the foot of the mountain, and took Peter and John and James with Him to climb up its lonely sides alone. These three were not only closest to Him, but they were the strongest of them all. Peter, as we have seen, He had named "The man of rock." His nickname for the two brothers was "Sons of thunder." These phrases of appreciation show how He valued them.

Leaving the vineyards in the foot-hills they passed many shrines to Pan and other Roman and Grecian gods, that peeped from the ravines that crowned the crests, and crossed the snow-worn curve beneath the lofty peaks above. It was late autumn and the country below was as golden as the halls of Heaven.

When night fell the four strong climbers had ascended far into the heights, and they ate their supper beside some icy brook that gushed from the snow line just above. The unaccustomed air made them drowsy, and soon the three fishermen were rolled up in their heavy sheepskin cloaks beside the campfire and were at once asleep.

JESUS' VISION ON THE MOUNTAIN.

During this night there came to Jesus the greatest spiritual experience of His life. While He was praying, it entered into and glorified His communion. The words which describe it were like those which describe the temptations, figurative, for, as the Gospel of Matthew tells us, it was a vision. Probably the words have come to us from the lips of Jesus Himself.

During the desert temptations you remember that three voices spoke to Jesus. So it was in the spiritual trial upon the mountain.

The first voice which He heard was that of the Law and Prophets. These were personified to the Jews by Moses and Elijah. Malachi, the latest of the prophets, had said that they were both to reappear before the coming of "the day of the Lord." What had they to say about the death of the Messiah? First, it seemed to Jesus, Moses spoke, reminding Him how his whole life long he himself had waged war with the seen on the side of the unseen, when his whole people were faithless because of discouragement. Then Elijah spoke for the later prophets, to say that, while at times they seemed to tell of a visible victory by the Messiah, there was a deeper voice which told of One who was to be "despised and rejected of men." The prince who had gone down to lead up a nation of slaves and the

prophet who had given his strength to a thankless people were witnesses to the glory of a life of unappreciated love. The man who had passed from earth by the kiss of God, and the one who had gone up in a chariot of fire could tell Him that death was nothing to be feared. The two patriots who had not failed to find successors, the one in the commander Joshua, and the other in the healer Elisha, could tell Him that such lives as theirs and His could not finally perish. Thus the message of the past inspired the courage of Jesus.



MOSES.
By Michael Angelo.

might expect to live forever in the mere dream of being heroic. That was, no doubt, the mood of all those who loved Him, but His time was now come; He could no longer tarry in the places where life was safe and beautiful.

Into the silence that followed there fell a third, a still, small voice, as if from the watching stars. It was the voice of the Father: "This is my beloved Son, who pleases me so well." Before the challenge of that divine confidence could the Master linger longer upon the mountain?

He awakened His three friends, and together they went down, facing the sunrise.

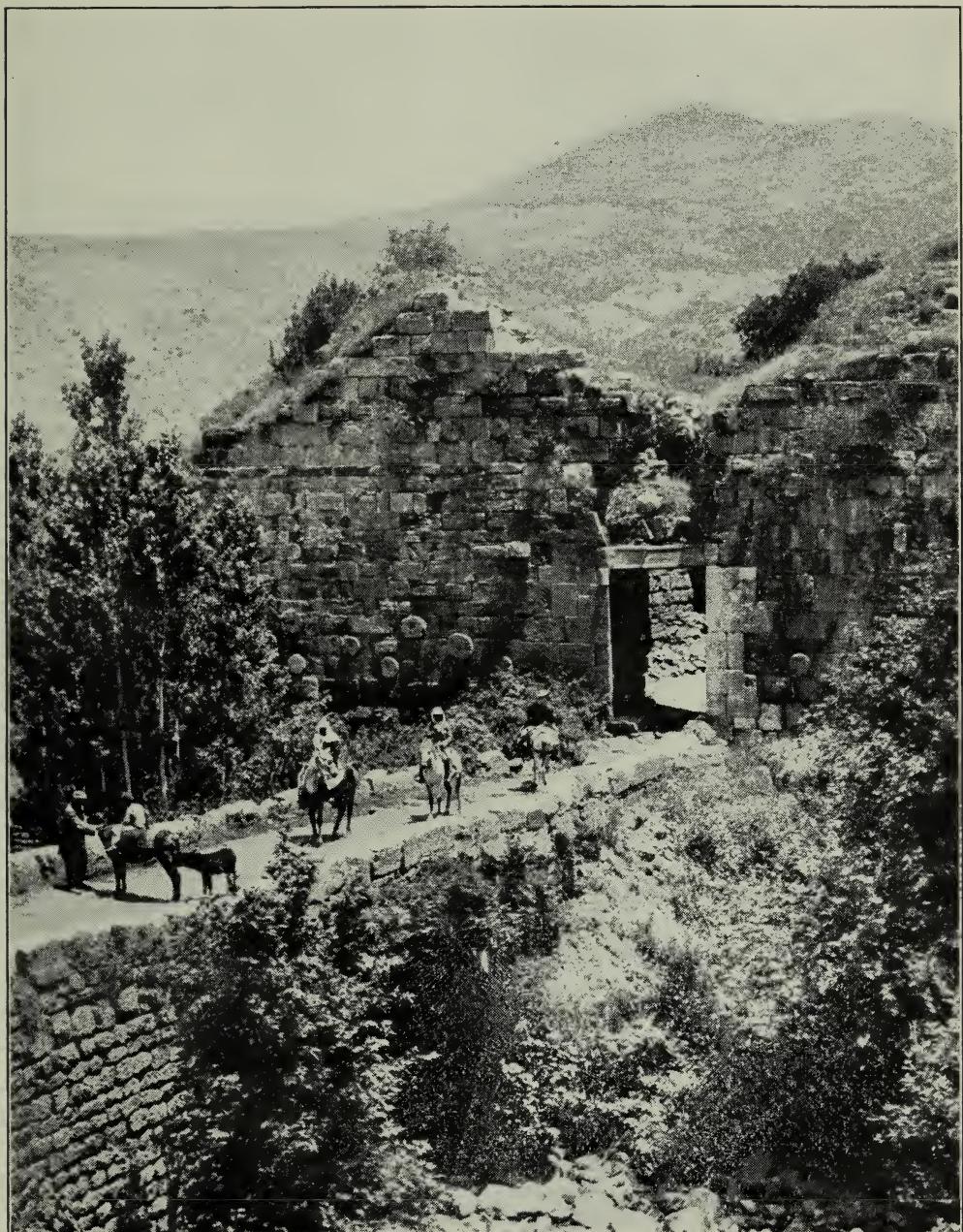
When Peter and James and John awoke, Jesus with glowing face told them the vision-parable and explained it to them. There was enough of the heroic in these three so that they could at least catch a glimpse of the possibility of

The second voice was present and a human one. He seemed to hear Simon Peter, who was heavy with sleep, saying something about building some mountain shepherd huts, so that these two guests of His vision might remain, as if He and they



HEAD OF ELIJAH.

From the Copley Print of Sargent's "Frieze of the Prophets" in the Boston Public Library. (Copyright 1898, by Curtis and Cameron.)



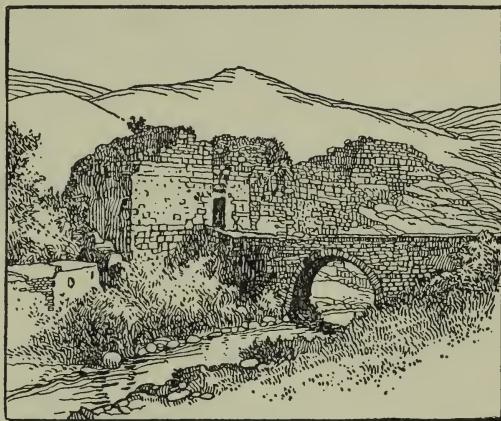
Copyright by Underwood & Underwood.

OLD GATE TO CÆSAREA PHILIPPI, AT THE FOOT OF
MT. HERMON, PALESTINE.

a life so brave that it would not shrink from death, in the path of duty. They saw Jesus in a new light, transfigured. For them thereafter the Law and the Prophets might vanish; "they saw no one, save Jesus only."

JESUS IN THE VALLEY.

At the foot of the mountain, perhaps by the bridge at the city gate, Jesus and His three companions met a jeering crowd gathered around a helpless boy, whom their other comrades who had remained below had tried in vain to relieve. It was a sharp contrast to their eyes that had just been dazzled by a heavenly vision, but to us it seems an even more glorious thing to remember how patiently Jesus bent down among His limp-hearted disciples and cured the young sufferer. "For the valley, not the mountain, is man's home, but the brook that gives man drink in the valley has its source on the mountains."



ENTRANCE TO CÆSAREA PHILIPPI.

Years later, when the death of Jesus had come, and when they faced danger and death themselves, they were comforted many times by what one of the letters which bears the name of Peter called "the Voice from Heaven, when we were with him in the Holy Mount." That Voice, to which Jesus had listened all His life, had said, "This is my beloved Son, who pleases me so well. Listen to him."

The life and words of Jesus gave them strength to follow Him, in "loving not their lives even unto death."

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Was Jesus like the Messiah whom Peter expected? How was He different?

What did Jesus mean by the "cross," which He said was impending for Him?

What attitude did Peter express when Jesus told His future trials?

- What was Jesus' opinion of Peter at that moment?

What was the meaning to Jesus of His vision of Moses and Elijah?

What did Peter's words mean to Him?

What was the significance of the reassuring word from the Father?

What occurred the next morning at the foot of the mountain?

What did this act of Jesus reveal as to His character?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Compare the temptations of Jesus and the Transfiguration in order to show how they were alike.

Show how they differed.

Find all that you can about Moses, which will help to clear up why he should have appeared in a vision to Jesus.

Do the same thing as to Elijah.

How did this vision strengthen Jesus for death? In defining his purpose?

How did it help Him in strengthening His will?

How did it help Him in planning the details of His work?

Read to the class the hymn of Sir Robert Grant, "When gathering clouds around I view," and state the problems in our own lives which this hymn suggests that God can help us to solve.

What would be the Christian attitude for you to take if you learned that you were afflicted with an incurable disease?

What things does this vision of Jesus suggest that one needs to see clearly if one has a hard duty to perform?

Heroes of the Faith

By HERBERT WRIGHT GATES

A Course of Forty-eight Lessons for Intermediate Pupils.

ABRAHAM.
DAVID LIVINGSTONE.
MOSES.
JOHN HOWARD.
FLORENCE NIGHTINGALE.
GUIDO F. VERBECK.
ELIJAH.
AMOS.
JEREMIAH.
JOHN WYCLIF.
GIROLAMO SAVONAROLA.
MARTIN LUTHER.
GASPARD DE COLIGNY.
JOHN KNOX.
PAUL.
JOHN ELIOT.
WILLIAM CAREY.
ADONIRAM JUDSON.
MARCUS WHITMAN.
WILLIAM TAYLOR.
JOHN G. PATON.
JONATHAN.
ESTHER.
JUDAS MACCABÆUS.
CHINESE GORDON.
WILLIAM PENN.
GEORGE T. ANGELL.
FRANCES E. WILLARD.
EVERYDAY HEROES.

Experience has shown that at about the age of thirteen a radical change in the subject studied is of great advantage in securing a sustained interest. Boys and girls will return to the study of the Bible with fresh interest if they pause here to study the working of Biblical principles in other lives than those included in the Biblical records.

The HEROES OF THE FAITH has been constructed in view of this need. Its purpose is, by brief sketches of heroic and grandly religious characters, to kindle in the pupil the spirit by which these men and women were animated, and to encourage its expression in similar virtues and deeds.

A constant effort is made in these studies to bring the heroic down to everyday life, rather than to exalt it beyond the reach of common men. The lessons aim to impress the possibility and need of heroism in any kind of situation—in the home or school, on the street or the playground.

*Send postal to-day for free sample
lessons and examine yourself
these interesting studies*

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York

EVERY PRIMARY TEACHER

USING THESE LESSONS
SHOULD HAVE THE

Primary Teacher's Helper

This book contains a Point of Contact Story, Suggestive Lesson Talk, Blackboard and Sand Tray Work especially designed for teaching the First Grade, with Additional Suggestions for teaching the Second Grade; complete directions for the Manual Work for the Primary Department, including Tearing and Cutting Work and Pasting of Pictures; also, much valuable Information for Teachers. Mothers wishing to assist their children with the lessons will also find **THE HELPER** of great service.

PRICE, POSTPAID: Single copies, 15 cents a quarter.

Yearly Subscription: single copies, 50 cents; five or more copies to one address, 40 cents each.

For FREE specimen copies, address

Charles Scribner's Sons
New York

MANUAL WORK MATERIAL

BY a special arrangement with the New York Sunday School Commission, Inc., 416 Lafayette Street, New York, all orders for manual work material will be filled by them. This includes note book covers, punched paper, pictures (singly and in sets), maps, decorative borders, cutting and tearing paper, crayons, etc., as mentioned in the lessons. Send all orders for this material directly to the Commission, mentioning that it is for use with the Bible Study Union (Blakeslee) Lessons.

Charles Scribner's Sons
RELIGIOUS LITERATURE DEPARTMENT

THE BIBLE STUDY UNION (BLAKESLEE) LESSONS

The Completely Graded Series

THE FULL CURRICULUM

when complete will provide special courses for pupils between the ages of four and twenty-one, and a number of elective courses for adults, as follows (courses ready being indicated by an *):

I. BEGINNERS. 2 Years. Courses to be announced.

II. PRIMARY. 3 Years. Ages 6-8.

Aim. To awaken love and trust, and cultivate habits of obedience.

First Year. God the Loving Father and His Children. (Ready September, 1912.)

Second Year. *God's Loyal Children. Learning to Live Happily Together. (Now ready.)

Third Year. *Jesus' Way of Love and Service. (Now ready.)

III. JUNIOR. 4 Years. Ages 9-12.

Aim. To lead to a desire for God's control in life, by Bible study. Constructing the JUNIOR BIBLE as follows:

First Year. Part I. *Early Heroes and Heroines. (Now ready.)

Second Year. Part II. *Kings and Prophets. (Now ready.)

Third Year. Part III. *Life and Words of Jesus. (Now ready.)

Fourth Year. Part IV. Christian Apostles and Missionaries. (Ready September, 1912.)

IV. INTERMEDIATE. 4 Years. Ages 13-16.

Aim. To bring the adolescent into vital and personal relations with Christ and the church.

First Year. *Heroes of the Faith. (Now ready.)

Second Year. *Christian Life and Conduct. (Now ready.)

Historical Geography of Bible Lands. (Ready June, 1913.)

Third Year. The Story of the Bible. (Ready September, 1913.)

Fourth Year. The Life of Jesus. (Ready September, 1912.)

V. SENIOR. 4 Years. Ages 17-21.

First Year. *Preparations for Christianity. (Now ready.)

Second Year. *Landmarks in Christian History. (Now ready.)

Third Year. *The Conquering Christ. (Now ready.)

Fourth Year. The Modern Church. (Ready September, 1913.)

VI. ADDITIONAL SENIOR OR ADULT.

*Heroes and Crises of Early Hebrew History. (Now ready.)

*Founders and Rulers of United Israel. (Now ready.)

*Kings and Prophets of Israel and Judah. (Now ready.)

*The Makers and Teachers of Judaism. (Now ready.)

The Making of a Nation. (Ready October, 1912.)

Send post card for free samples of any grade in which you are interested. Our booklet, THE CORE OF GOOD TEACHING, describing the work for the whole course, will be sent free upon request.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, New York

268.05
BFG
Third Quarter

The Bible Study Union Lessons

THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY

MAY 27 1918

INTERMEDIATE GRADE

THIRD QUARTER

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

153-157 FIFTH AVENUE

NEW YORK

Preparations for Christianity

For Senior Young People and Adults

A course of study surveying those religious ideas and ideals which progressively served as a preparation for Christianity, and finally received their fullest expression and realization in the life and teachings of Jesus.

The course begins with a sketch of the old Semitic world, of which the Hebrew people constituted a part, traces the rise and development of characteristic features of the religion of Israel, and concludes with a review of the fundamental religious teachings of Jesus.

The course is divided into four parts. Each deals with a specific period of historical and religious development.

Part I describes the religions of ancient Egypt, Babylon, and Palestine (as introductory to the Biblical records of Israel's faith), primitive forms of Hebrew worship, the influence of the Exodus upon Israel's religious life, the early religious literature of the Hebrews, and concludes with a study of the religious aspects of David's career.

Part II begins with a study of Solomon's institution of the temple service, notes the character of the religious life of Israel during the period of the Divided Kingdom, and examines the religious content of the earlier prophetic utterances, carrying the course forward to the time of the Exile.

Part III covers the religious developments of the Exilic and Postexilic periods, special attention being given to the later prophetic writings, the establishment of Judaism under priestly auspices, and the religious temper of Israel under the Maccabees.

Part IV shows how the religious ideas developed in the Old Testament period were enlarged and spiritualized in the teachings of Jesus.

Longer and Shorter Course. The course is complete in fifty-two lessons, but two six months' courses composed of Parts I and II and Parts III and IV are eminently practicable, while Parts I, II and III make an appropriate nine months' course. Part IV is so based upon Part III that it cannot be studied to the best advantage without a previous study of the latter.

Send postal to-day for free sample lessons

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
153-157 Fifth Avenue New York

THE BIBLE STUDY UNION LESSONS
THE COMPLETELY GRADED SERIES

The Life of Jesus

BY
WILLIAM BYRON FORBUSH

Author of "The Boy Problem," "The Boys' Life of Christ,"
and "The Coming Generation"

CHARLES F. KENT, PH.D.
GEORGE A. COE, PH.D., LL.D. } *Consulting Editors*

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
NEW YORK

TABLE OF CONTENTS

		Page
Chapter 25.	Jesus Taking the Harder Road	175
Chapter 26.	A Preliminary Visit to Jerusalem	180
Chapter 27.	In Perea and Samaria	186
Chapter 28.	Going up to Jerusalem	192
Chapter 29.	Jesus' Arrival at Jerusalem	199
Chapter 30.	Jesus' Attack on the Corrupt Priests	208
Chapter 31.	The Conspiracy Against Jesus	214
Chapter 32.	Jesus' Attitude in the Face of Death	224
Chapter 33.	Betrayed, Denied, Condemned	233
Chapter 34.	The Death of Jesus	244
Chapter 35.	The Christ Who Abides	252
Chapter 36.	The Radiance of the Master	258

The Bible Study Union Lessons (Completely Graded Series), Intermediate Grade:—Published quarterly by Charles Scribner's Sons, 153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York; price 12 cents each, 48 cents a year.

LIST OF LESSONS.

- I. A BOY OF THE HILLS.
- II. JESUS' WORLD.
- III. JESUS' SCHOOLING.
- IV. A COUNTRY BOY'S FIRST VISIT TO THE CITY.
- V. THE VILLAGE CARPENTER.
- VI. THE MAN WHO HAD A NEW MESSAGE.
- VII. JESUS' CHOICE OF A CALLING.
- VIII. HOW JESUS WENT ABOUT HIS WORK.
- IX. HIS EARLY COMRADES.
- X. HOW JESUS LIVED IN HIS NEW HOME.
- XI. THE MEN WHO TOLD US ABOUT JESUS.
- XII. THE PHARISEES STUDY JESUS.

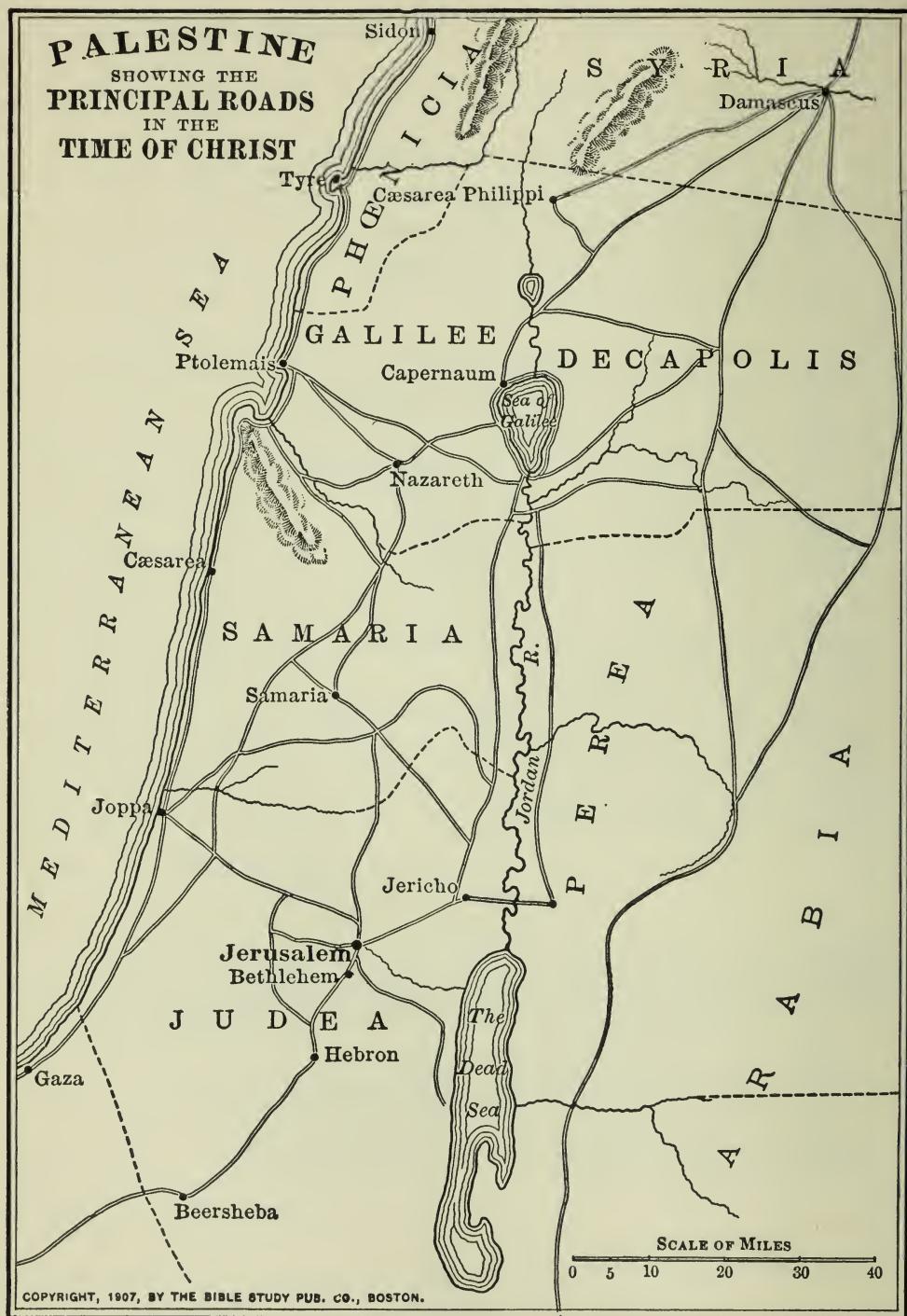
- XIII. WHAT JESUS' TEACHING WAS LIKE.
- XIV. JESUS' MESSAGE TO HIS NEIGHBORS.
- XV. JESUS' PROCLAMATION OF THE KINGDOM.
- XVI. A NIGHT AND DAY OF PERIL.
- XVII. BACK TO HIS OLD HOME.
- XVIII. THE ADVENTURES OF HIS TWELVE MESSENGERS.
- XIX. THOSE WHO WERE WITH AND AGAINST JESUS.
- XX. THE MARTYRDOM OF A HERO.
- XXI. JESUS SHARING WITH THE MULTITUDE.
- XXII. THE BREAK WITH THE PHARISEES.
- XXIII. JESUS AMONG A FOREIGN PEOPLE.
- XXIV. THE SOURCE OF JESUS' COURAGE.

- XXV. JESUS TAKING THE HARDER ROAD.
- XXVI. A PRELIMINARY VISIT TO JERUSALEM.
- XXVII. IN PEREA AND SAMARIA.
- XXVIII. GOING UP TO JERUSALEM.
- XXIX. JESUS' ARRIVAL AT JERUSALEM.
- XXX. JESUS' ATTACK UPON THE CORRUPT PRIESTS.
- XXXI. THE CONSPIRACY AGAINST JESUS.
- XXXII. JESUS' ATTITUDE IN THE FACE OF DEATH.
- XXXIII. BETRAYED, DENIED, CONDEMNED.
- XXXIV. THE DEATH OF JESUS.
- XXXV. THE CHRIST WHO ABIDES.
- XXXVI. THE RADIANCE OF THE MASTER.

YOUNG PEOPLE'S PROBLEMS

AS INTERPRETED BY JESUS.

- XXXVII. WHAT IS THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION?
- XXXVIII. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A DISCIPLE OF JESUS?
- XXXIX. WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE A CHURCH MEMBER?
- XL. THE SPECIAL PLACE OF YOUNG PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH.
- XLI. ONE'S CALLING.
- XLII. THE FIELDS OF CHRISTIAN SERVICE.
- XLIII. THE CHRISTIAN IDEAL OF A HOME.
- XLIV. THE PROBLEM OF GETTING READY FOR LIFE.
- XLV. FOLLOWING JESUS IN OUR WORK, SCHOOL AND PLAY.
- XLVI. THE INNER LIFE.
- XLVII. THE PROBLEM OF SORROWS AND DISAPPOINTMENTS.
- XLVIII. A LIFE OF SERVICE.



CHAPTER XXV.

JESUS TAKING THE HARDER ROAD.

Jesus closes His affairs at Capernaum: Mark 9:30–33; Matt. 19:1. The higher conditions of discipleship: Luke 9:57–62; 14:25–35; 9:38–42.

His greater personal tenderness: Mark 9:38–42; 10:13–16, 28–30.

His deeper feeling: Luke 12:50; 6:22, 23.

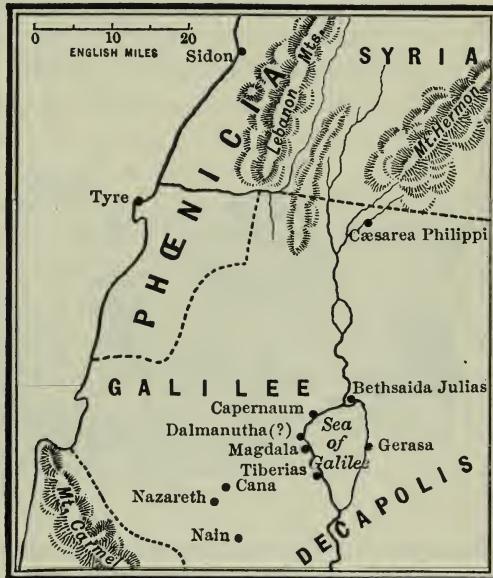
Let us study the situation in which Jesus found Himself after coming down from the mountain.

He was facing manifold difficulties. He had rejected the idea of becoming a revolutionary leader. He would not disown His mission and go back to live as a carpenter. He was so true to His race that He had overcome the temptation to carry His message to Syria, to Greece or to Rome. His plain duty was to go up to Jerusalem and present as clearly as possible the teachings of the Kingdom. Here, at the very centre of the Pharisaic party and the headquarters of the priests and the courtiers of Herod, there was manifest danger. Jesus had yet to discover whether the

broader-minded Jews who, in that great city, had felt the Roman and Grecian influence and were restless under the tyranny of the Pharisees and priests, would welcome the freedom which His message offered. Uncertain though the result was and suggestive of failure, it was this perilous and heroic venture to which He was commissioned by the Father.

THE ERA OF THE SECOND CHOICE.

The keynote of the next six months in the life of Jesus, a period which has been less studied than any other, is not so much that of tragedy as of commonplace. In this His career resembled that of John the Baptist. John had had first his



MAP OF NORTHERN PALESTINE.

period of popularity, and finally his martyrdom. Between came the dreary months of imprisonment. So this period in Jesus' life might be called "The Period of the Second Choice."

The first ambition of Jesus had been to develop a religious commonwealth in Galilee. He could have wished to have the idyllic life of His earliest ministry indefinitely continued, with enthusiastic crowds, feasts and flowers, and a hearty welcome everywhere. Naturally He desired the unhesitating devotion of His twelve disciples; a better understanding with His own family; the social success of His miracles, leading to a wider power, shared by His disciples and extending to the alleviation of suffering generally; and finally the leavening of Jerusalem, the national centre, by His teaching.

Jesus now had to make a second choice. He was disappointed by the nation's failure to respond.

The last opportunity for a religious or social movement in the Jewish nation, to which all their history had pointed, was to be neglected. He discovered that they had no spiritual readiness. They were like prisoners whose leader had found a way to escape, but who preferred to sit timidly in their bondage. The



RUINS OF A SYNAGOGUE IN NORTHERN GALILEE.

Kingdom which He had said was "at hand" seemed destined to postponement without a date. He was wounded by the ingratitude of those He healed and those He taught. There are suggestions that there had begun a fading of His miracle-power, due to the lessening of a co-operative trust in Him. The daily presence of Judas brought the constant influence of a growing treachery. His was a continually narrowing path. Once He had controlled events; hereafter events controlled Him. With no leisure, no opportunity for quiet meditation, He was henceforth hurried on, whether He would or no. It grew plainer that He must depend upon others to finish the work He had begun, others apparently poorly fitted to the great task. With no indolence nor mistake on His own part, the interest which He had aroused seemed slowly ebbing away. With "the half of a broken hope for a pillow at night" Jesus had to rebuild His whole life in six months.

There were special burdens which weighed upon His heart. The electric response of the throng was no longer felt. Jesus had no home. Not only did His kinsmen misunderstand Him, but He had, for the Kingdom's sake, renounced marriage, the universal lot of the Jew, the helpful intimacy of a tender and understanding helpmeet and the sweet sanctities of a household of His own.

THE HIGHER DEMANDS OF THE KINGDOM.

From this time on Jesus insisted more and more on whole-hearted surrender to His teaching by those who professed discipleship. He evidently realized that He could not win a large number of Jews to accept the Kingdom of God and that He would have to depend upon a few loyal disciples who would carry the work forward after His death. To a scribe of the Pharisees who came desiring to be a disciple, Jesus gave the challenging statement that while foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, the Son of man was utterly homeless. When another professed himself willing to follow, after the long service of lamentations for his dead father were finished, Jesus said, "Let the dead bury their dead, but you go and preach the Kingdom of God." When still a third was willing to be a disciple, after he had said good-bye to his friends at home, Jesus reminded him that these farewells often weakened the courage of a disciple, and that those who would follow Him must do so directly and without looking backward. These divisions, He said on another occasion, were more than mere earthly partings. They were sharp differences of belief and purpose between those who had been dearest friends. "From henceforth there shall be five in one house divided—three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son; the son against the father; the mother against the daughter; and the daughter against the mother."

To all who at this time were impressed by His message He told the carpenter's story of the man who started to build a tower without counting the cost to see whether he would be able to finish it.

THE TENDERNESS OF JESUS.

And yet, even when He was demanding the utmost consecration of the men and women who would follow Him, He showed a deeper tenderness toward individuals than ever before.

Were His friends to plunge into danger? Jesus said, "Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God, but even the very hairs of your head are numbered. Fear not, therefore, you are of more value than many sparrows."

At this time are we told of His taking children into His arms and blessing them, and the world has never forgotten the picture of Jesus surrounded by eager mothers, who believed the benediction of the great teacher was magical, and by crowds of happy children, while His own disciples, not understanding why He should pay any attention to these who seemed to them of little account, stood darkly in the background.

The Gospel according to Luke gives us at this time that great chapter, in which Jesus spoke what have been called "The three parables of grace,"—the story of the sheep that was lost because of its wildness of heart; the story of the coin that was lost because it was not put to use; and the story of the boy who was lost because he drifted without sense or purpose away from his father's goodness. This spirit of graciousness showed itself at this time in His attitude toward those whom His disciples thought to be His enemies. A man was attempting to imitate the work of Jesus in relieving the possessed, without acknowledging Jesus as his master. "Forbid him not," said Jesus kindly, "he that is not against us, is on our side." It may be that at this time, in answer to Peter's question as to

how often he should forgive his enemies, the Master told the striking story of the steward who refused to forgive his fellow-servant a trifling debt of twenty dollars, after he himself had been forgiven by his lord of an unpayable obligation of twelve million dollars. More than once, too, do we get glimpses of the deeper feeling which came to His own



FORDS OF THE JORDAN.

brave heart as He began to draw near the goal of His life's work. "I have a work to do," He once said, "and how am I distressed until I accomplish it!"

We, too, sometimes have to accept a second choice in securing

an education, in making a home, in finding a calling. Many of us must accept the second instead of the first wish of our hearts. God often uses our second choice to fulfil His own will. It was so with Jesus. The delay of success to the Kingdom caused it to become more substantial. Its rejection by the Jews made it world-wide. If Jesus had won a temporal success, the world would have been lost. We cannot conceive a life of Jesus without a cross, if that life were to transform the world.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

After returning home from Cæsarea Philippi in what direction did Jesus depart?

Did He ever return to Capernaum again? Why not?

What answers did Jesus make to three prospective followers?

What illustration did He take from the work of a carpenter?

What from the soldier?

How did He show His interest in children at this time?

How would you describe His attitude toward His twelve disciples?

What feeling did Jesus express as He drew toward the close of His ministry?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Give an imaginative statement of what would have been the rest of the story of Jesus' life if He had returned to the work of a carpenter.

Give an imaginative statement of what would have been the result upon Christendom if Jesus had forsaken Palestine and gone to Greece.

Take an illustration of a young person obliged to choose the "second best" in education, and show how he may get the best advantage from a second choice.

Do the same with a youth who must make a second choice as to his vocation.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A PRELIMINARY VISIT TO JERUSALEM.

Jesus appearing quietly at Jerusalem: John 7:10-15; 10:22-25; 12:42, 43.

His new emphasis upon Himself: Matt. 11:27-30; John 7:25-29, 37-44; 8:31-54; 10:32-38.

The attempts of the Pharisees to do Him harm: John 7:32, 43-52; 8:59; 10:39.

"For this man was not great
By gold or kingly state,
Or the bright sword, or knowledge of earth's wonder;
But more than all his race
He saw life face to face,
And heard the still small voice above the thunder."

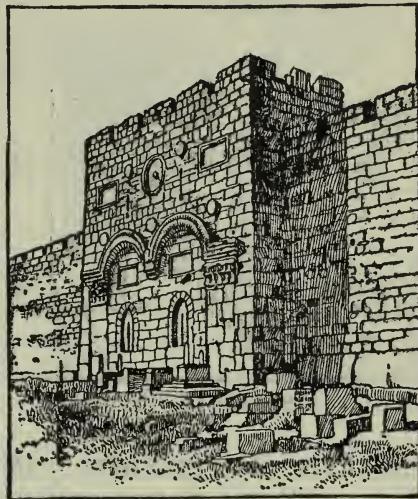
—Henry Newbolt: *The Nile.*

Scholars are divided as to the exact course of Jesus' journey after He left Galilee for the last time. If we had only the three earlier evangelists, we might suppose that Jesus went directly and publicly from Cæsarea Philippi to His death at Jerusalem. But the Fourth Gospel tells us that Jesus went up secretly upon a preliminary visit to Jerusalem, and then retreated to Perea and Samaria. This seems reasonable. Before presenting Himself to the nation as its Messiah, surrounded by His believers, He would find it helpful to discover the exact situation in the capital. It was a dangerous step to take, but a necessary one. Going up to one of the minor feasts, when the city was not thronged with strangers, Jesus could enter the city before the Pharisees had known that He was coming or had succeeded in organizing to capture Him. There, in one of the colonnades of the temple, which was open as an assemblage place and even for informal conferences, He could teach the people who chanced to gather about Him, as He had those who met Him in the village squares in Galilee.

It is noticeable in the accounts that have come down to us of these later teachings of Jesus, whether uttered in Jerusalem or not, that He seems to place a new emphasis upon Himself. When Napoleon, fresh returned from his victories across the Alps, urged his election by the people as Emperor, he had already crowded Paris with his soldiers. When nobler Cæsar came home again from his successes against Pompey, he won the heart of Rome by four magnificent triumphs, commemorating his victories in Gaul, Egypt, Pontus and Africa. But when Jesus came to claim the allegiance of His nation, He offered it nothing but Himself.

HOW DID JESUS THINK OF HIMSELF?

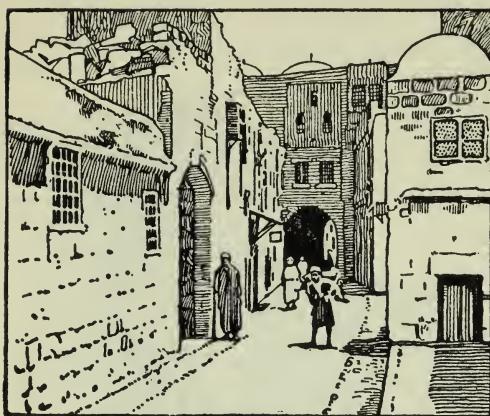
How did Jesus think of Himself at this time? Hitherto Jesus had most commonly spoken of Himself as "the Son of



THE GOLDEN GATE, JERUSALEM.

This gate is now walled up.

man." This phrase seems originally to have meant, "Son of Adam" or "of the dust," meaning merely a feeble human creature. In the prophecy of Ezekiel the phrase had been used many times to describe such an one who had been honored by God in being made a prophet. In the Book of Daniel the Son of man was described as the angelic being who was to inaugurate the visible Kingdom of God. The phrase, as Jesus used it, seems to have been chosen as one avoiding the making of any special pretension, but as suggesting that He



A STREET IN JERUSALEM.

was like His brothers, except as God had conferred upon Him prophetic power and a glorious mission. In the Fourth Gospel, in which a loving student of Jesus at the end of the first century endeavored to interpret Him, this conception is stated over and over. Jesus says of Himself at this very time, "of myself I can do nothing"; "I seek not my own glory, but the glory of him that sent me"; "my words are not of myself, but I speak as the Father has taught me." And Jesus said further of His own limitations, that He knew not the time when His Kingdom was to come in triumph, and it was not for Him to assign its offices of honor.

But Jesus had now, as we have seen, acknowledged Himself as the Messiah of the Jews. This thought was not inconsistent with the first, but joined directly upon it. The Messiah, as the prophets thought of Him, was a man whom God was to send for His people's sake to save them. Glorified by God, He was to fulfil the noblest national offices: He was to be king, priest, judge and prophet. And these, in a better and spiritual sense, Jesus believed Himself to be. He was a king, because He ruled in the heart of those who believed in him. He was a priest, because He was bringing men to God. He was judge, because His discriminations were true. He was a prophet, because as Dr. Robert E. Speer beautifully says, "Not only was Jesus the master prophet, but He was the great Prophecy." What He was His friends might become.

There was a greater and earlier conception of Himself in Jesus' mind, which we have seen was there from His boyhood. He thought of Himself as "Son of God." To Him this was His life's greatest discovery. We saw Him in His twelfth year deciding to enter upon His Father's business. At His baptism the fulness of sonship was conferred, like knighthood, upon Him. Every temptation in the desert tended to cause Him to disown His belief in His divine sonship. The message from the Father upon the mountain had reassured Him that He was still the beloved Son of His Father.

This thought that He was Son of God bound together His work as Son of man and as Messiah. One may make this plain by a simple illustration. A man walking down a country road comes at a turn upon a way-side rose bush. Here is the lowly, thorny shrub, and upon it the dainty, fragrant blossoms. "What is the source of this beauty?" the traveler asks, as he looks upon the humble plant and the meagre soil beneath it. Just then the sun breaks through a cloud and the sunlight glorifies the blossom. "Here is the source of the life of the shrub and of the beauty of the flower!" So, behind the humble service of the Son of man, and explaining the glory of His work as the Messiah, was the Light from Above. Because He fully recognized that He was Son of God, He was willing to be Son of man and was able to be the world's Messiah.

JESUS HIMSELF THE CENTRE OF HIS KINGDOM.

What Jesus believed about Himself is important just here because it explains His latest teachings. He accepted His sonship to God in all of its fulness and possible meaning. He told His listeners at Jerusalem and elsewhere that He was God's spokesman. "My words shall never pass away." He felt that men could not get along without Him. "No man knows the Father but the Son, and he to whom the Son wills to reveal him." "I can satisfy," was what in one phrase or another He was continually saying. And in some way, as we shall see more clearly later, He was sure that the future of the Kingdom which He was establishing was to be bound up with His own person. He was sure that He must go away. "But," He began to say, "I shall return again."

Toward the last, Jesus taught more about Himself than about His Kingdom. He did this because His message, as His days grew short, became increasingly a personal and individual

one. He was anxious to make others realize their sonship as He did Himself. As the Fourth Gospel has it, "that they might be one with the Father, even as he was."

And His work in Jerusalem was not in vain. The Jerusalemites were more learned and cultured than the people of Galilee. Many of the multitude believed on Him, others waited, wondering that the Pharisees did not acknowledge His claims, and a few even of the Sanhedrin secretly accepted Him as Messiah. Among these was one Nicodemus, whose wonderful secret dialogue with Jesus is briefly recorded in the third chapter of John.

THE PERIL OF JESUS IN JERUSALEM.

Twice at least, according to John's Gospel, disorganized companies of the Pharisaic party in Jerusalem attempted to stone Jesus. The chief priests and Pharisees also authorized the temple guard to arrest Him. When they had not done so and were called to account, these Jewish guards stated the extraordinary impression which Jesus made upon them, by which He had so aroused their religious interest as to make them forget their police duty, when they exclaimed, "Never man spake like this man!"

Scornfully one of the leaders of the Pharisees voiced their impatience when he answered, "Have any of the rulers or of us Pharisees believed on Him yet? This rabble which does not understand the Torah is cursed, anyhow."

Just then rose an unexpected voice from their own number. Nicodemus, the Pharisee and member of the Sanhedrin, who had personally talked with Jesus and learned what the heart of His message was, raised this fair question, "Does our Torah judge a man, unless it has heard what he says and knows what he is doing?"

But the same intolerant objector replied, "You are one of this Galilean party, then? Look in the Torah, and you will find that no prophet is going to come out of Galilee."

Jesus was forced to retreat from Jerusalem, and He found shelter beyond Jordan.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Trace upon the road map the probable course of Jesus' journey to Jerusalem.

In what places in Jerusalem did Jesus teach?

In calling attention to Himself what three titles did Jesus emphasize?

Repeat in your own words the illustration which the author uses to show how those three titles are related one to another.

Give in your own words Jesus' statement in John 7:37, 38, as to His ability to satisfy men's deepest needs.

What did Jesus say to show that He was convinced the future belonged to Him?

What was the net result of Jesus' teaching at Jerusalem?

What was the attitude of the Pharisees toward Him during this visit?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Read in the Book of Daniel (7:13) a passage referring to the Son of man, and endeavor to explain it.

Let two pupils take the characters, one of a shopkeeper and the other of a mechanic, living in Jerusalem, and conduct the dialogue in John 7, before the class, using their own language.

Let a pupil imagine himself to be the captain of the temple guard, sent by the Pharisees to arrest Jesus. Give in your own language the impression which this religious Jew derived from Jesus' teaching. Put this in the form of a statement by which he excused himself for not arresting Jesus.

CHAPTER XXVII. IN PEREA AND SAMARIA.

Jesus turning from Galilee to Perea and Samaria: Matt. 11:20-24.

Going into Perea: Mark 9:30; 10:1; John 10:40-42.

In Samaria: Luke 9:51-56; 17:11-19; 10:25-37.

In Judea: John 11:54; Luke 10:38-42.

Moving steadily toward Jerusalem: Mark 10:32-34; Luke 9:51; 13:22; 19:28.

Incidents of these journeys: Luke 13:10-17, 38-42; John 9:13-41; Mark 10:13-31.

Jesus once said, quoting an old saying in bitter pathos, "A prophet surely has a just claim to die inside Jerusalem." Originally the proverb referred to the intolerance of Jerusalem and her constant persecution of her great prophets, but Jesus had in mind especially the fact that if He were to be done to death by His enemies, it were better that He had died in the Holy City after He had stated His full message and where His death should have the fullest influence in causing it to be remembered. It was therefore Jesus' concern that He should not be caught unawares in the country. After He had fully trained the Twelve in solitude and in safety, He knew that the proclamation of His mission in the capital was inevitable, though it might be fatal to Himself. While we cannot trace His footsteps in detail, the evangelists tell us over and over of Jesus spending much of His time during the last few months of His life in Perea, that southeastern portion of Palestine, east of the Jordan, which was yoked together with Galilee under the rule of Herod Antipas, in the remote regions of Judea associated into the last days of John the Baptist's work, and in Samaria. While Herod was already taking notice of Jesus and realizing the possible danger of allowing Him to be free, Perea was sparsely settled, and it was not difficult, by moving rapidly from point

to point, to keep out of Herod's reach. In Samaria, which was governed by Pontius Pilate, Jesus would be comparatively safe because, on account of the Jewish contempt for the Samaritans, the Pharisees would neglect Him.

THE MISSION OF THE SEVENTY.

Luke tells us that at this time Jesus summoned a larger number of disciples, perhaps seventy in all (a number equal to that of the translators of the Old Testament and of the Sanhedrin, the religious supreme court of the Jews) and that He sent them out two by two, as He had the twelve disciples, to the places whither He Himself was about to come. To these villages of the despised Samaritans and the neglected Pereans across the Jordan He told them to go with haste, assuring them that Capernaum and Bethsaida and the other cities of His own province, which had rejected Him, had lost the priceless opportunity that was now in store for all who would receive Him. In giving them their mission we are told that He offered a prayer of thanksgiving, rejoicing that if "the wise and understanding" should remain blind, these "babes" should have the opportunity to hear the good news.

THE LARGE-HEARTEDNESS OF JESUS.

Everything that we know about the work of Jesus among these peoples increases our admiration for His generous spirit. It was perhaps to them that He told the immortal story of "The Good Samaritan," in which He showed how, after priest and Levite had neglected the opportunity for brotherhood, the despised Samaritan proved himself to be a true neighbor. To them also He told of the laborers who, though called last into the vineyard, were because of their readiness equally rewarded by the owner with the first, and of the great supper, which those out in the highways and hedges enjoyed after the invitation had been rejected by the neighbors



THE GOOD SAMARITAN.

of the host. In the incident of the ten lepers, told at this time and supposed by some scholars to have been a parable originally, the one healed man who was grateful was a Samaritan.



THE RETURN OF THE LOST SON.

God and of the humble, sinful penitent who finds Him. It was now, according to Luke too, that Jesus first taught the Lord's Prayer.

SOME RESPONSES TO JESUS.

As beautiful as was the spirit with which Jesus lived and worked among these neglected races was the response that came to Him from some whom He met. It seemed as if never did the few who received His word believe in Him so deeply as now. Possibly at this time, rather than earlier, came the wonderful dialogue with the Samaritan woman at the well, recorded in John. It was during this journey, as we have said, that particular mention is made of His being surrounded by the eager faces of children. It was now that He found His second and last home with the friends in Bethany, of whom one comforted Him by her housewifely attentions, and the other by Her eager acceptance of His teaching.

JESUS AND A MAN OF WEALTH.

Just now, when it was evident that to become a companion of Jesus meant peril, the only man of wealth and rank who was ever associated closely with Jesus came and asked humbly the way to inherit eternal life. This story is so full of meaning that we need to stop to understand it. It does not seem fair that

Luke tells us that it was to these Pereans that Jesus told the story of "The Ninety-Nine" and the story of "The Prodigal Son." Most typical, however, of all the teachings of this time was the story of "The Pharisee and the Publican," in which Jesus descended from general statements to show that God's love reaches over barriers of caste, and gave this double portrait of the self-righteous individual who loses

so fine a youth should be barred out of the Kingdom of Heaven because he was rich. But Jesus thought of the righteous society that He was establishing, and He realized that if the man kept his money, the others would have felt jealously that he was in a class by himself. If Jesus had shown him particular favor, his motives would have been suspected. Even if the man had divided his property with the others, this would only have attracted selfish men and would have paralyzed the influence of Jesus among the poor.

As one of our own recent scholars interprets it — “This was not a matter between the man and God, but between the man and God and the people.” The young rich man probably did not come to Jesus when He was alone, but when He was surrounded by His disciples and a crowd of the plain people of the neighborhood. It was impossible for a youth, constituted as he was, to join such a company as this without sacrificing his money. No wonder that Jesus loved him, if he was willing to volunteer at such a time as this. No wonder also that it was hard for the youth to make the sacrifice which such an enlistment required. Though sorrowful, yet he went away from Jesus, and made the great refusal.



JESUS AND THE RICH YOUNG RULER.

By Hofmann.

THE EAGERNESS OF JESUS.

Four times the Gospels reiterate that Jesus pressed steadily on toward Jerusalem. Mark says: “Jesus was going before them: and they were amazed; and they that followed were afraid.” The earnestness of His determination called forth both their wonder and their awe. His buoyant anticipation hastened their own footsteps to follow His. We wish we knew more of those expectant moments when the full vitality of Jesus’ splendid faith must have expressed itself in clearer statements as to the great venture for the Kingdom which He was to undertake and as to the deeper meaning which lay the other side of the reception which He should meet at Jerusalem.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.
For just what purpose did Jesus send out seventy disciples?

Give the titles of three or four of the stories which Jesus told about this time.

Why would Jesus now especially enjoy times of rest at Bethany?

Why did the rich young man wish to become a follower of Jesus?

Did Jesus want him?

Why did Jesus not accept him?

Why did the young man decline to follow Jesus?

What was the attitude of Jesus as He began His last journey up to Jerusalem?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Tell briefly in your own language, the story of The Good Samaritan, found in Luke, ch. 10.

Tell the story of the Great Supper, found in Luke, ch. 14.

Tell the story of the Pharisee and the Publican, found in Luke, ch. 18.

What would Jesus have done with the rich young man's money if he had offered it to Him?

What would be the duty of a rich young man to-day as to his fortune, if he desired to follow Jesus?

Explain how actions of our own sometimes concern not only ourselves and God, but ourselves, God and humanity. (You might take the matter of joining the church; the expenditure for luxuries; our behavior toward servants.)

WORK FOR ALL.

Trace on the frontispiece road map in pencil, marking the direction of journeys by arrows, all the journeys which Jesus took from the time He left Capernaum for the last time until His final arrival in Jerusalem.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

GOING UP TO JERUSALEM.

The gathering of His many disciples to Jesus: Matt. 20:29; 27:55; Luke 14:15; 19:37; 23:49.

The message to Herod: Luke 12:31-33.

The ambition of James and John: Mark 10:35-45; Matt. 9:33-37.

Jesus' attitude toward His friends: Mark 10:23-30; Luke 11:27, 28; 22:28, 29; John 7:3-8.

Jesus' teachings at this time: Luke 12:1-59; 13:1-9.

The faith of Bartimæus: Mark 10:46-52.

The visit of Zacchæus: Luke 19:1-10.

The rest at Bethany: Matt. 21:17; Mark 14:3-9.

From this time forward, say the Gospels, Jesus was continually surrounded by a multitude of His disciples. The national festival seems to have been the occasion for the gathering of those who believed in Him. The fact that Jesus had been rejected by the people of His own province and by the Samaritans might cause us to suppose that He was entirely without followers except the Twelve. On the contrary, Paul (1 Cor. 16:6) tells that even after His death several hundred men and women were found who were true to Him. Many of these came from Galilee, some from Samaria and Perea, and a few possibly from the regions to the North. They were a mixed company, not held together by common bonds of acquaintance or training; but for a time, at least, with Jesus as their centre, they presented the appearance of unity.

Amid the turmoil of this crowd Jesus preserved His inner calm. The last three events recorded at His departure from Perea show Him to us never more like Himself. These three acts were the blessing of the children, the placing before the rich young man of the higher conditions of the Kingdom, and His brave message to Herod who was threatening to kill Him.

THE AMBITIONS OF JOHN AND JAMES.

Jesus was now near Jericho, the boundary city between Palestine and Moab, whence the road turns to climb up through the desert toward Jerusalem. At this juncture occurred one of the most pitiful events in the career of Jesus. John and James, the brothers for whom He felt the highest trust and love, came to Him one morning when He was alone, with their mother, who was also one of those good women who had been helping

Him in Galilee. With unusual respect they bowed before Him as if He were a king.

“What do you wish, madam?” He asked Salome courteously.

“Sir,” she said, boldly, “I want you to do for us whatever we ask you.”

“What is it you want me to do for you?”

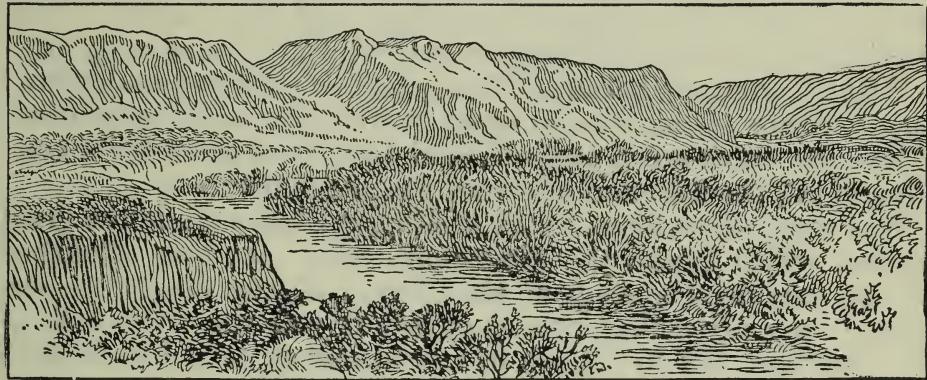
“I want you to say that in your Kingdom these two sons of mine shall sit as viceroys, one of them on your right side and the other on your left.”

What could be more saddening than this complete misunderstanding of His work, after the experience of these brothers in Cæsarea and upon the mountain top?

“You do not know what you are asking,” Jesus responded warmly, turning to the brothers. “Are you fit to drink the cup that I have to drink?”

“Yes!” the two young men shouted, “We can.”

“You shall indeed drink my cup,” said Jesus sadly, thinking



Based on a photograph.

THE JORDAN VALLEY, NEAR JERICHO.

of the sufferings they should bear for Him, “but as to the seat—that is not mine to give. It belongs to those to whom it has been assigned by my Father.”

JESUS’ EXPLANATION TO PETER.

It was of course difficult for Jesus constantly to use the term “the Kingdom,” as He did in order to connect Himself with the dearest hope of His race, without being misunderstood. He sought, in common with all His people, a state of social righteousness. They hoped to have it suddenly by the interposition of their Messiah. Jesus expected it to come slowly and gradually as the result of active and humble endeavor. He once made the distinction clear to Simon Peter, His most loyal friend.

The incident is related only in Matthew, and is placed during the hurried last visit to Capernaum, when Jesus was closing His affairs, to withdraw forever from His native province. The story has a touch of gentle humor.

The tax collector, who possibly had taken the place of Matthew, His disciple, came to Jesus and Peter to demand the poll tax which was required of all adults, and which, though used to sustain the temple, was payable to "the kings of the land."

Jesus, as we shall see more clearly later, probably did not offer sacrifice, and so perhaps might have claimed exemption for that reason.

"How does this seem to you, Simon?" He asked whimsically. "From whom do the kings of the land receive tribute, from their sons or from strangers?"

"From strangers," replied Simon.

"Then we sons are free," said Jesus.

The meaning was this: We are the sons of the new Kingdom that is to take the place of sacrifices and the temple. Why should we pay taxes to support that which we have outgrown?

"But," continued Jesus, "lest people should not understand how it seems to us, you go down to the lake and cast a hook. When you catch a fish you will find that it is good for a coin. Go and sell the fish, and pay your tax and mine."

Not many days later, as we shall learn, Jesus made the great protest which began the movement that ere long abolished all the sacrificial system of the Jews. In the meantime and indeed long after that proclamation, it was the chief task of His disciples, not to engage in revolutionary acts, but in such humble tasks as fishing, and while earning their daily bread, both to inculcate the spirit that is above formalism and to await patiently the time when the freedom of the Kingdom was ready to be established.

JESUS' EXPLANATION TO THE TWELVE.

Again—and the Gospels place this also in the home of Jesus just before He departed from it—Jesus illustrated the fact that the Kingdom of Heaven is not a place for personal ambition and struggle for pre-eminence.

"What were you talking about to-day on the road?" He asked them. Everybody was abashed, for they had, as Jesus overheard, been eagerly discussing which of them would occupy the two high places which James and John were coveting.

Just then a neighbor's little child came running in and Jesus called him and took him up in His lap and put His arms around him.

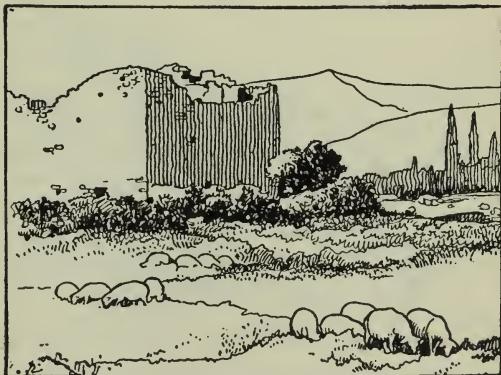
"In the Kingdom of Heaven," said Jesus quietly, "the man who wants to be foremost is lowest of all. Unless you turn yourselves about and become as little children (in their trustful helpfulness) you will not get into the Kingdom at all."

And as He gave the child back to his mother who came for him, He said, "Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my name, receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me." Is it not possible that Jesus spoke these words to the mother, and that He meant something like this: "Whoever takes one little child and trains him for my sake, is my disciple, and my disciples are the disciples of him who sent me." It would be both deeply Jewish and truly Christian for Jesus thus to put the badge of honor upon faithful fathers and mothers.

THE ISOLATION OF JESUS.

Though surrounded by the multitude, Jesus was really alone. His Twelve were true, but just now even the best two had shown that they understood Him no more than children, and that they were thoroughly selfish. On the other hand, they at least trusted Him, and so far as they knew how tried to follow His way.

There is evidence in the Fourth Gospel that by the time of Jesus' private visit to Jerusalem, His brothers by blood had come to realize that He was not insane and, even if they did not believe in His spiritual mission, they assumed a friendly attitude and made suggestions, kindly if not wise, for the success of His work. They had not kept close enough to the situation to realize the peril of a public appearance before He was ready for the full and final proclamation of the Kingdom, and so they tried to persuade Him then to show Himself to the world.



THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE OF ZACCHÆUS.

"My opportunity," said Jesus, "has not come. Yours is always ready, for the world does not hate you. You go to the feast. I will follow soon." It was a little saddening to feel that, when His own brothers were disposed to be friendly, their past misunderstanding was the very barrier which deprived Him of their company at the time when it would have been most comforting.

Jesus at this time seemed to feel a special yearning toward the Twelve who had been true to Him so long. One day when He was speaking of the difficulty which rich men felt in entering the Kingdom, Peter reminded Him of the sacrifices which he and his companions had made. "Yes," answered Jesus quickly, "you have left homes and kindred, children and lands for my sake and the Gospel's, but you shall have a hundred-fold now, and in the world to come eternal life." And again, thinking of the many solitary hours which they had spent with Him discussing the deep things of life, He said lovingly to them, "You are the ones who have continued with me in my temptations, and the Kingdom is appointed unto you, even as the Father has appointed it unto me."

THE COMFORTING OF JESUS.

On the way up to Jerusalem two events occurred which comforted the soul of Jesus before His great trial. A blind beggar believed in Him and understood Him. A rich, despised tax-gatherer, a little fellow named Zacchaeus, was so touched by Jesus' proffer of friendship that, repentant, he determined to restore his ill-gotten gains and divide them among the poor. Jesus smilingly did every honor possible to the man whose

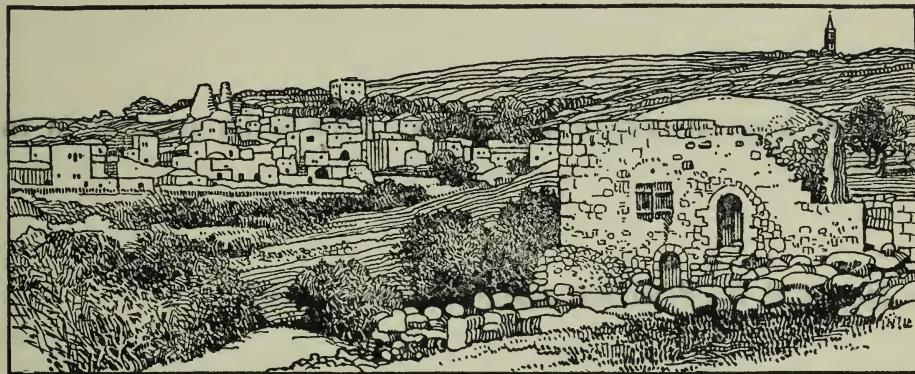
ON THE ROAD FROM JERUSALEM TO JERICHO.

soul was so much greater than his stature.

Just over the hill from Jerusalem is the village of Bethany, where Jesus had found a foster home and choice souls who understood Him. To this quiet shelter, away from the constant



pressure of the crowd, Jesus directed His steps, in order to win refreshment before the eventful week of the Passover.



From a photograph.

BETHANY.

The hill on the right is the Mount of Olives. The tall ruins at the left are said to mark the home of Lazarus.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Why did so many people follow Jesus at this time?

Who were they?

What message did Jesus send to Herod?

Through what city did Jesus go from the country up to Jerusalem?

What request did John and James make at this time?

What did Jesus say to Peter about whether members of the Kingdom of Heaven ought to pay taxes?

What kind of people did He say were to be greatest in the Kingdom?

How did the disciples misunderstand Jesus?



THE ROAD FROM JERUSALEM TO JERICHO.

From a photograph.

What was Jesus' relation now to His brothers?

Tell the story of Zacchæus.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Pick out three or four sayings from Luke 12, which seem to you characteristic of Jesus' teaching just at this point.

Tell in your own words, the story from Luke 12 which seems to you best to explain Jesus' attitude.

How did Jesus in His teaching make use of current events? Illustrate this in your own language from Luke 13:1-9.

How is religion easy, and how is it hard?

CHAPTER XXIX.

JESUS' ARRIVAL AT JERUSALEM.

The expectation of Jesus' coming: John 11:56, 57.

The multitude coming forth to meet Him: John 12:12, 13; Mark 11:9.

The approach to the city: Mark 11:1-7.

The acclamation of the multitude: Mark 11:8-10; Levit. 23:40.

The song which they sang: Psalm 118 (especially verse 26).

Anticipations of the ancient prophets: Zech. 9:9-12; Isa. 62:10-12; Psalm 8:2.

The protests of the Pharisees: Luke 19:39, 40.

Jesus' lamentation over the city: Luke 19:41-44.

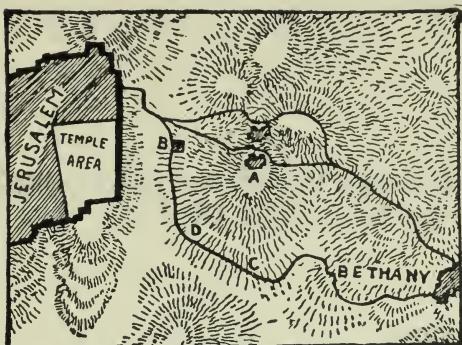
The turmoil within the city: Matt. 21:10, 11; Psalm 24:7-10.

“Ride on, ride on in majesty,
Hark! All the tribes hosanna cry;
O Saviour, meek, pursue thy road
With palms and scattered garments strow'd.

“Ride on, ride on in majesty,
In lowly pomp ride on to die;
O Christ, thy triumphs now begin
O'er captive death and conquered sin.”

—Henry Hart Neilman.

Jesus could not detach Himself from the eager multitude which had surrounded Him ever since He left Perea.



MAP SHOWING ROADS FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHANY.

Up through the wilderness of Judea, past the scenes of the education of John the Baptist, and along the thief-infested road mentioned in His own story of "The Good Samaritan," Jesus led the multitude. It was a hard and dreary journey, and pleasant indeed it must have been when He arrived among the gardens and olive trees of Bethany. Here, on the last Sabbath of His life, He was the guest of a man named Simon, and in His house occurred that gracious act of impulsive love, the anointing of Jesus by Mary, which Jesus accepted as the unconscious anticipation of His burial.

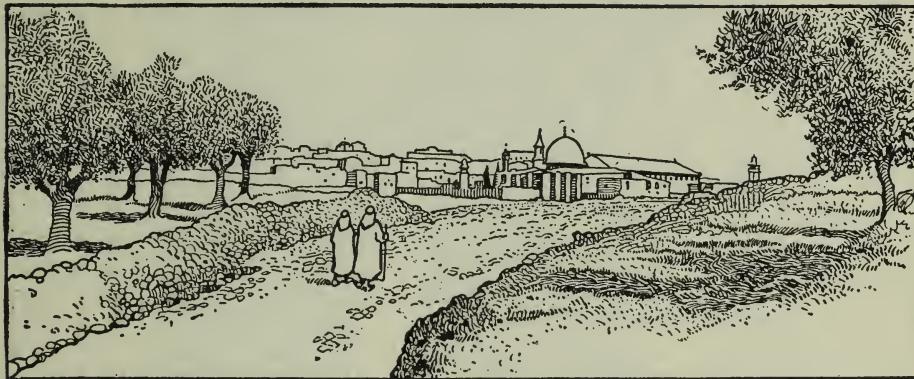
THE MESSIANIC PRESENTATION.

The next morning Jesus entered Jerusalem. He could not well avoid making this a public occasion. Already both His friends and His enemies in the city were expecting His coming. The multitude, who had been camping upon the hill slopes around Bethany, would not leave Him to go alone. Jesus consented to this public arrival, not for Himself, but as a method by which He might most strongly present to Jerusalem the one purpose of His life,—the Kingdom of Heaven. Once His work could be quiet, gradual, careful; now, in order to attract the city's attention He must act forcibly, even dramatically. Jerusalem was the centre of His enemies, the Pharisees. If enough of the populace had become interested, or could be made interested in His message, there would be time for Him to teach, even in Jerusalem, the laws of His Kingdom. If the people failed Him this hope must be disappointed.

We can now see the wisdom of the thoughtful plan which Jesus used in order to offer Himself to Jerusalem, in a way least likely to be misunderstood. As the centre of popular interest, it was appropriate that He should ride to the city gates. He did not choose a horse, which would at once have been recognized as the emblem of warfare, but He sent two of His disciples to a friend in Bethany and borrowed an ass, the common beast of

burden, used, however, even by kings in times of peace. The significance was plain. Jesus came to Jerusalem, not as a conqueror, but as a king of peace, who claimed and expected the loyalty of His own people. In a beautiful poem, embedded in the prophecy of Zechariah, there was the anticipation that a king of peace should thus, in future time, enter his capital. Jesus, no doubt, hoped that this old prophecy would be remembered.

A company from the city had already come out to meet Him. Among them were probably friends whom He had made during His previous visit, a mixed throng of citizens, and a few Pharisees. These turned at the hilltop and formed the vanguard of His escort. Around and behind Jesus was the multitude which had accompanied Him up from the desert. Nearest to Him were the Twelve, and surrounding them were people from



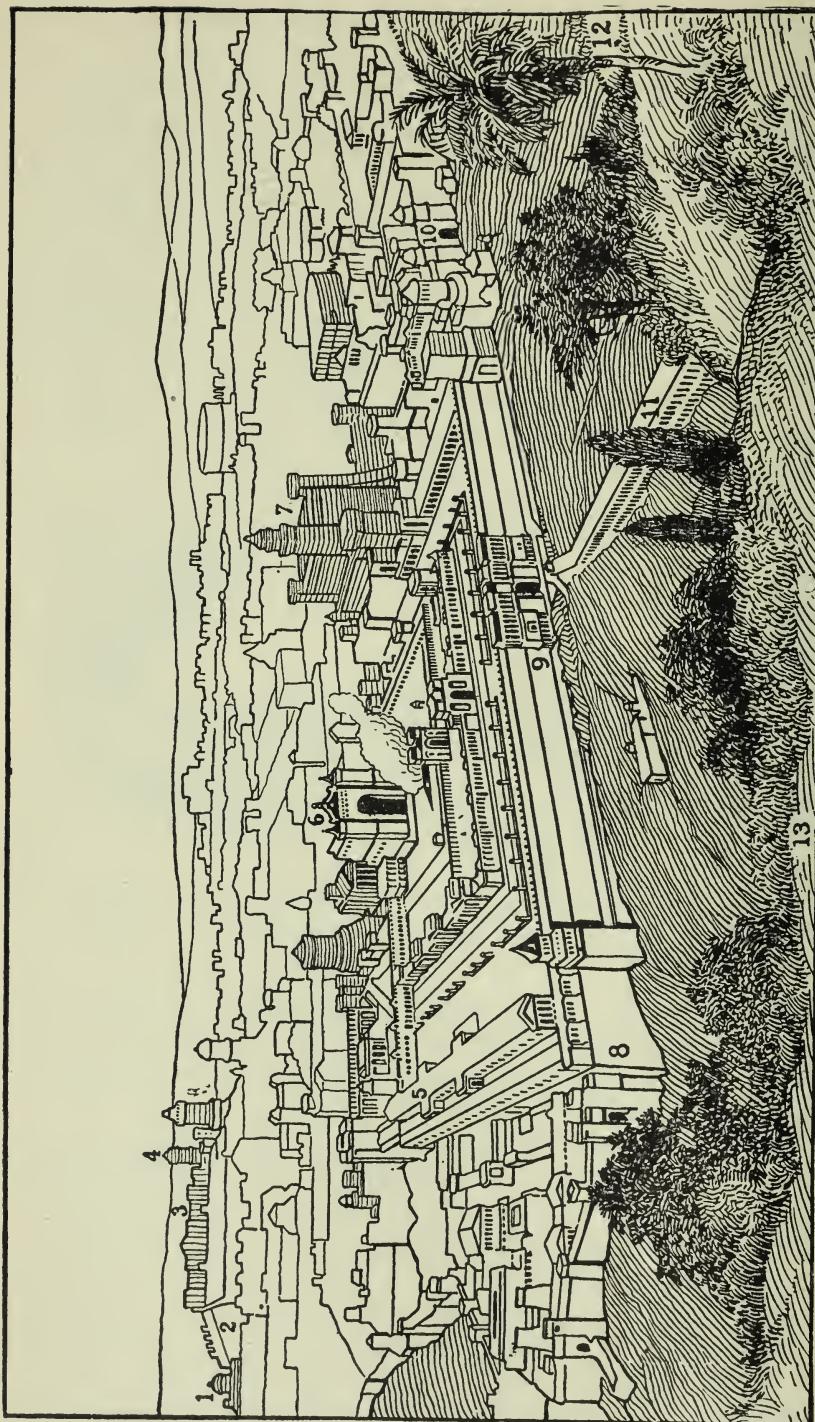
From a photograph.

VIEW ON THE ROAD FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHANY.

Jesus passed between these two places several times during the closing week of His life.

all parts of Palestine, most of them poor and from the country. In the midst, rode Jesus, dressed in His faded cloak, and the embodiment in speech and manner of the peasantry, despised by the silk-robed priests in Jerusalem.

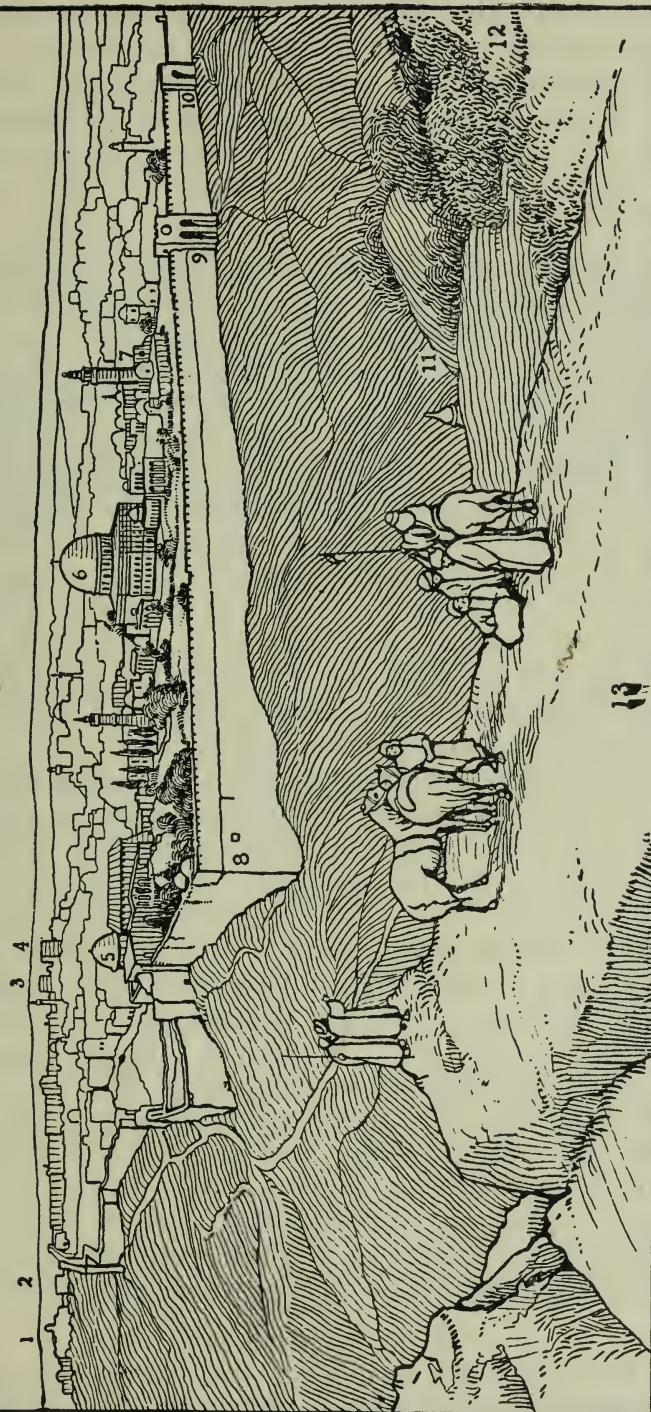
The evangelists remember various cries which were raised as the excitement grew, but all of them unmistakably meant the recognition of Jesus as the nation's king. The great company also joined from time to time in singing a national anthem, whose martial strains were of the same import. A scene, similar to that when the multitude were fed beside the lake, was being enacted. The old anticipations were again aroused that Jesus would lead a revolt against the Romans. Jesus could not prevent this momentary misunderstanding, but He



Ancient Jerusalem, Showing Many Points of Interest in the Life of Christ.

(Based on Selous' picture of Jerusalem in its grandeur. Copyright, 1905, by Bible Study Publishing Co.)

EXPLANATION. 1. Tomb of David and "Upper Chamber." 2. Palace of Caiaphas. 3. Palace of Herod. 4. Tower of Hippicus. 5. Herod's Royal Porch. 6. The Temple. 7. The Castle of Antonia. 8. Southeast Corner of Wall. 9. The Gate Shushan. 10. The Sheep Gate. 11. Bridge over the Brook Kidron. 12. Gethsemane. 13. Western Slope of Olivet.



Modern Jerusalem, Showing Many Points of Interest in the Life of Christ.

(Based on Solous' picture of Jerusalem in its decay. Copyright, 1905, by Bible Study Publishing Co.)

EXPLANATION. 1. Tomb of David and "Upper Chamber." 2. Palace of Caiaphas. 3. Palace of Herod. 4. Tower of Hippicus. 5. Mosque of El-Aksa, on site of Herod's Royal Porch. 6. Mosque of Omar, site of the Temple. 7. Turkish Barracks and Minaret, site of Castle of Antonia. 8. Southeast Corner of Wall. 9. Golden Gate, site of Gate Shushan. 10. St. Stephen's Gate, site of Sheep Gate. 11. The Kidron Valley. 12. Gethsemane. 13. Western Slope of Olivet.

was able to control it. When the Pharisees called His attention to the fact that such outcries were likely to awake the attention of the Roman authorities and lead to bloodshed, Jesus realized how soon these acclamations would change to distrust, yet insisted that these genuine, though fickle feelings, should have sway. "Should these hold their peace, the very stones," He said, "would cry out."

JESUS AND JERUSALEM.

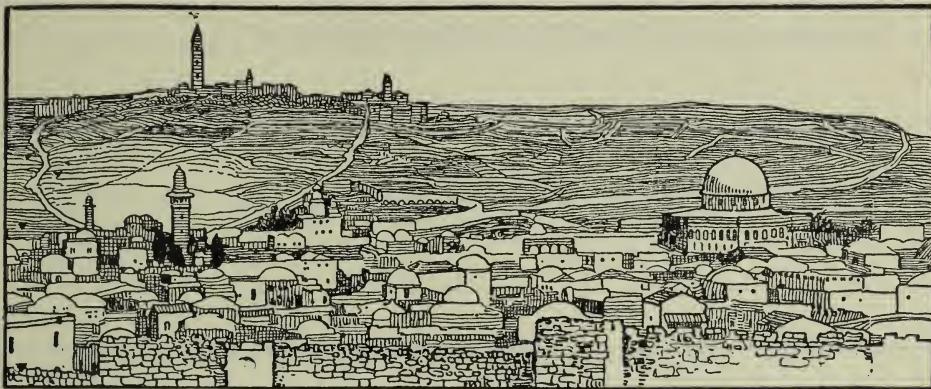
The southern roadway over the top of the Mount of Olives is hidden for a time by a hillock from the view of the city. Around a turn it comes out upon a natural platform, where suddenly the whole city is seen below. There, terrace on terrace, within the high and ancient walls of stone, rose houses, palaces, fortresses and public buildings, while in front of all, the gem of which the rest was but the setting, shone the Holy House beneath the splendor of the morning sun, a mass of snow and gold. Behind it was the surrounding circle of everlasting hills, and, lying beneath the multitude as it did, it seemed to them possible that their King and Messiah might now, by raising His hands, cause its walls to crumble that He might ride over them, or, as many of them expected, suddenly expand the Holy City by a miracle until it should cover all Judea.

To the thoughtful mind a great city is always a terrible sight. Its needs, its sorrows, and its defilements are as visible as are its aspirations and its glory. The realization of the deeper needs of the great capital suddenly seized the mind of Jesus, and as Luke alone tells us, Jesus burst into momentary lamentation, feeling with a statesman's knowledge, how its restless spirit was certain eventually to be crushed beneath the vindictive tyranny of Rome. But for the most part the ride of Jesus toward the city that day was one of mingled hope and joy. He could not be indifferent to the simple gladness of the men, women and children who threw palm branches, blossoms, and even garments in His pathway, and truly, as He recognized the awful perils before Him, He could not but cling to the hope that a sufficient number of this enthusiastic escort would stand by His side to protect Him from the hatred of the Pharisees, and even to enable Him to rouse the spiritual soul of the city.

WITHIN THE CITY.

In the meantime the city itself was full of turmoil. Some priests, gathered upon a portico roof of the temple, had noticed

the unusual crowd which was both leaving and approaching the city so early in the Passover week. Perhaps one of them caught sight of Jesus, mounted, in the foreground, upon the ridge at the hilltop beside the descending roadway. "Look!"



THE MOUNT OF OLIVES FROM JERUSALEM.

Showing the temple area in the foreground and the roads over and around the Mount of Olives.

he exclaimed. "The whole world has gone after Him." The captain of the temple-watch sounded the "assembly" to his company, and the city garrison in the fort close by was posted in readiness for an uprising from within or a concerted attack from without the walls. No beast was allowed to enter the great city, and as Jesus dismounted and walked on foot through the gate beneath the massive wall, some of the soldiers who were posted over the gate asked curiously of the excited, but peaceful, mob below, "Who is this?" Enthusiastically came the reply, "It is the prophet, Jesus of Nazareth." Through the narrow lanes of the city followed close by the multitude, to which, no doubt, was added a curious throng from every house-door, Jesus entered in through the eastern gate of the temple into the court of the Jews, where the excited choir boys echoed the song which they had just heard, and here at the very heart of Israel, hailed Him as their King.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

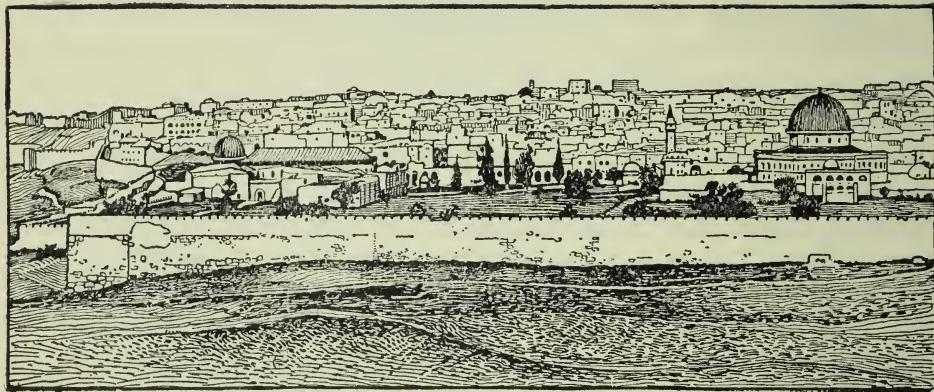
What expectation was there as Jesus approached Jerusalem?

What two multitudes escorted Him into the city?

How did Jesus ride toward the city?

What did the people say and sing on the way?

What did they mean by these words?



JERUSALEM, FROM THE MOUNT OF OLIVES.

From a photograph.

What anticipations of such an occasion were expressed by three ancient prophets?

What did the Pharisees say at this enthusiasm?

What was Jesus' reply?

Why should He lament over Jerusalem?

What impression was produced inside the city at Jesus' approach?

Did it, as the Pharisees anticipated, lead to bloodshed?

Where did Jesus go after He entered the city?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Describe from the map and illustrations, and such other information as you can secure, so that the rest of the class may imagine it, the roadway and the view between Bethany and Jerusalem.

Tell in your own language the story of a similar entrance into Jerusalem by another prospective king. (Found in 1 Kings 1:15-40.)

Just how did the entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem help bring in the Kingdom?

Did the doubtful attitude of the Jerusalemites constitute a crisis in Jesus' life? How?

If you had been an educated youth living in Jerusalem in the days of Jesus, what would have been your attitude toward Him? Take into account your schooling, the influence of the Pharisees and of the priesthood, and the environment of your neighbors, Jewish and Roman. Set this down in fifty words.

Thinking of some special social need of your own community, what do you think would be the campaign of Jesus to-day in order to meet it?

Put down in a hundred words a program for a Christian solution for the deepest problems of your own city or town.

How can a young man or woman now do the best service to the city?

CHAPTER XXX.

JESUS' ATTACK UPON THE CORRUPT PRIESTS.

The prophetic anticipation of the Messiah's coming to the temple:
Malachi 3:1.

The purging of the temple: Mark 11:15-17.

The prophetic quotations used by Jesus: Isa. 56:7; Jer. 7:11; Mark 14:58. (Compare Hosea 6:1-3.)

The attitude of the prophets toward sacrifice: 1 Sam. 15:22; Isa. 1:11-18; Amos 5:21-24; Micah 6:7, 8; Psalm 51:16, 17.

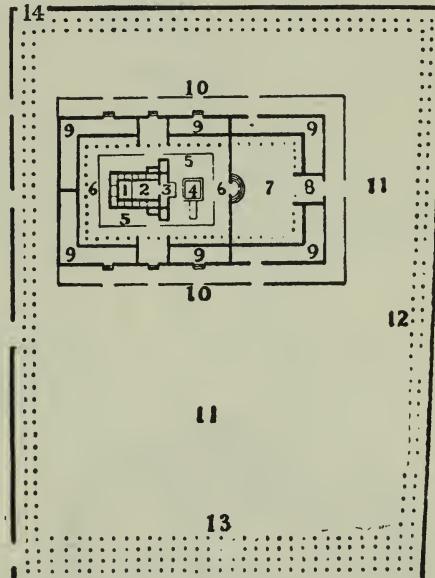
Imperious hurries round us throng
And anxious loads are everywhere;
The daily care has hushed the song,
The haste has crowded out the prayer.

O, Thou, who in the Temple's strife
Didst cleanse its courts that men might pray,
Enter, O Lord, our noisy life
And cleanse a place for prayer to-day.

THE SITUATION IN THE TEMPLE.

The Jewish temple, the successor of the simple tent of meeting, to which the Jews once brought the incense of their praise,

was now the fortress of priestly privilege. In the court of the Gentiles, a large plaza, originally intended as a place where reverent foreigners might come and learn to love the Jewish faith, a market and fair had been set up. Annas, the high priest's father-in-law and the real ecclesiastical leader of the nation, had made an arrangement with Pontius Pilate, the Roman procurator, that the priests should have all the profit of this outrageous secular enterprise. The excuse was that the people otherwise would bring unclean and imperfect offerings. The priests had gradually moved on from the custom of examining proposed sacrifices, to the point where they would accept practically nothing but that which was bought in the temple market. The opportunity for extortion was plain, and it was fully utilized. At this period the common people brought a great many voluntary as well as prescribed offerings, and it was, of course, natural for the priests to encourage the multiplication of gifts to placate God or secure special benefits. For their sicknesses, their sorrows and their joys the people came bringing their gifts of cattle and grain. And the temple ministers were supported by this market, and the worship of Israel was built upon the foundation of graft.



GENERAL PLAN OF TEMPLE AND COURTS
AS REBUILT BY HEROD. DRAWN TO
SCALE.

1. Holy of Holies.
2. Holy Place.
3. Temple Porch.
4. Great Altar of Burnt Offerings.
5. Court of the Priests.
6. Court of Israel.
7. Court of the Women.
8. Beautiful Gate.
9. Priests' Chambers.
10. "Soreg" or Balustrade, within which Gentiles were not allowed to go.
11. Court of the Gentiles.
12. Solomon's Porch.
13. Royal Porch.
14. Entrance to Castle of Antonia.

THE INDIGNATION OF JESUS.

We get here a new and interesting light upon the character of Jesus. Beneath the self-control we see revealed a heart of fire. It has been said that the finest test of a man is what makes him indignant. This test Jesus magnificently met, for there is no nobler expression of anger than that against the abuse of

the weak by the strong. We have already had other evidences of the ruggedness of Jesus' nature which we ought to remember as we try to get a unified impression of Him. His strength had such various manifestations: in His self-effacement as a patient workman doing a humble duty, in His solitary conquest over the triple temptations of young manhood, in His chivalry to sinners, in His mastery of His enraged neighbors at Nazareth, in His refusing a kingly crown, in facing His foes in Jerusalem by teaching in the holy place. We are about to see even grander expressions of His manhood in the midst of the tragedy which followed upon His declaration of war against the priestly tyrants who dominated Jerusalem.

THE PURGING OF THE TEMPLE.

Jesus had, no doubt, recognized upon His previous visit that He must purge the holy place before He could do anything else.



DRIVING OUT THE MONEY CHANGERS.

It is often so in a city which needs moral reform. One of the latest of the prophets had foretold that the Messiah should come with suddenness to this temple, and a still later prophetic writing, not found in the Old Testament, called "The Psalms of Solomon," had anticipated that the Messiah would cleanse Jerusalem. Descending the steps from the court of the Jews, into the court of the Gentiles, solitary and alone, but watched with amazement by the throng which had followed Him into the temple, Jesus moved swiftly into the midst of the market, and seizing a handful of rushes from the floor, drove the confused marketmen and their cattle out of the enclosure and forbade the citizens of Jerusalem to use this open space as a thoroughfare for convenience in carrying their burdens across the city.

THE ATTACK UPON PRIESTCRAFT.

This brave and striking action of Jesus was more than an attack upon priestly abuses. It was in principle, an assault upon the system of sacrifice itself. Jesus' words on this occa-



PURIFICATION OF THE TEMPLE.
From a painting by H. Hofmann.

sion show that He revered the temple because God had planned that it should be "a house of prayer," rather than because animal sacrifices were offered therein. In the age-long controversy between the prophets and the priests, Jesus took the side of the prophets, the greatest men in Israel's history, who insisted that the reek of blood and the heaping up of grain were not pleasing to God, but that the only sacrifice which He desired was that of an humble and sincere heart. It is possible that He had long determined that at a fitting opportunity He would strike a blow at this outgrown institution, through which people paid penance of their possessions in place of the honest penitence of their hearts, and allowed themselves license for sinful deeds under the cover of their sacrificial offerings.

It may have been at this time that He uttered that unforgettable sentence about the temple which was used against Him at His trial in a garbled form. Its original wording was probably somewhat as follows: "This temple made with hands shall be destroyed. But another will soon arise made without hands." That is, this temple is doomed to destruction at the hands of the Romans. But temples, with their bloody sacrifices, are not essential to true religion; on the contrary God is raising up a spiritual temple, not built with hands, the temple of a redeemed humanity. The same thought is expressed in different words in Jesus' conversation with the Samaritan woman. "The hour cometh when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem shall ye worship the Father. But . . . true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth."

The prophets had looked forward to the day when all Israel should know the Lord. Even the Pharisees differed in theory from the priests upon this matter, and had become the nation's schoolmasters so as to teach each Israelite how to know and worship God. They had, however, as we have learned, gradually substituted the knowledge of legal traditions for direct communion with the Father.

In the light of the cleansing of the temple by Jesus how startling seems the fulfilment of the saying of that staunch old Jerusalem prophet, Jeremiah:

"I will put my law in their inward parts,
And in their heart will I write it;
And I will be their God,
And they shall be my people;

And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor,
And every man his brother, aying, Know the Lord:
For they shall all know me,
From the least of them unto the greatest of them."

And, again, read the saying of Zechariah, the prophet of a restored temple:

"Every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holy unto the Lord of hosts . . .
And there shall be no more a trafficker in the house of the Lord of hosts."

As the marketmen and their cattle fled, at once there came flocking into the temple a crowd of the lame, the sick and the poor, groups of Gentiles who once more had access to the place of prayer, and companies of children who again recognized the Master as the nation's leader. Such was the brave and noble presentation which Jesus made of His divine claims. As He had attacked the Pharisees without compunction, so now He attacked priestcraft without mercy. Jesus never destroyed except to put something better in its place; and as men saw the wrong of injustice and the uselessness of blood sacrifices, they also began to see how much more a genuine and direct communion with God might mean to themselves and to their nation.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What anticipation is found in the Book of Malachi as to the coming of the Messiah to Jerusalem?

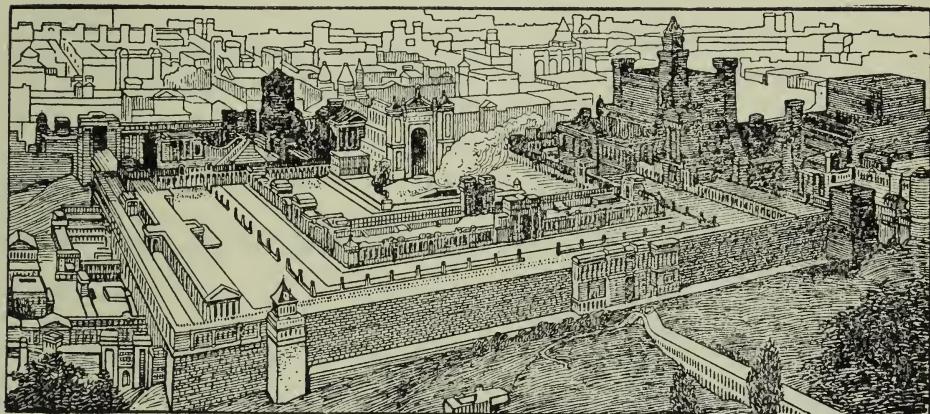
Tell the story of the purging of the temple.

Against what abuses was it a protest?

Of what three prophetic quotations did Jesus make use in purging the temple?

What was the meaning of His reference to Hosea 6:1-3?

After reading the five quotations referred to from the prophets, state their attitude toward the sacrifices.



THE TEMPLE AREA IN THE TIME OF CHRIST.
From Selous' picture of Jerusalem in its Grandeur.

What was Jesus' attitude as to the sacrifices?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Read the last part of the fifteenth chapter of I Samuel and tell why it was that Samuel protested against the sacrifices of Saul.

Read the first part of the first chapter of Isaiah and explain the situation in Judea which caused Isaiah to believe sacrifices were of little value.

Read the first part of Amos 5 and explain the situation in northern Israel, which caused Amos to disown sacrifices.

Read the third chapter of Micah and explain what there was in the character of the princes of Israel which caused Micah to disbelieve in sacrifices.

Read the first part of Psalm 51, and explain why the individual there mentioned finds sacrifices unsatisfying.

If Jesus should enter our own church to-day what would He remove from it?

What can we do to make our church worthy of the approval of Jesus?

What would Jesus find to-day in our market places, against which He would protest as being an obstacle in the way of His Kingdom?

CHAPTER XXXI. THE CONSPIRACY AGAINST JESUS.

The rapt attention of the people to Jesus: Luke 19:48; 21:38.
The priests' challenge: Mark 11: 27-33.

The Pharisees' attempt to entangle Jesus: Mark 12:13-17, 38-40.
The Sadducees' attempt to overwhelm Him in controversy: Luke 20:27-40.

Some friendly visitors to Jesus: Mark 12:28-34; John 12:20-36.

The conspiracy against Jesus: Mark 14:1, 2, 10, 11.

The generous widow: Mark 12:41-44.

The next morning when Jesus came in from Bethany to Jerusalem the court of the Gentiles was crowded. With difficulty He pressed His way to the top of the steps at the edge of the platform which led to the inner colonnade and inclosure. His coming was recognized with shouts and song. The prophet of Nazareth was the central figure in Jerusalem that day.

THE CHALLENGE OF JESUS' AUTHORITY.

But His supremacy was not to be unquestioned.

Hardly had Jesus found His way to a high and central spot where all could see and hear Him when there came out from the priests' chambers an imposing company. Escorted by a body of scribes of the Pharisees and members of the religious assembly of the Jews, came Caiaphas the High Priest and Annas his father-in-law, the most powerful man in the nation. In religious authority and official pomp, in historic dignity and splendor of costume no company of similar impressiveness to-day can be compared, short of that of the Pope and the College of Cardinals as they might appear before a vast concourse in front of St. Peter's at Rome. The great congregation outside bowed in reverent prostration. The dialogue that followed gets part of its force from the fact that it was overheard by at least a part of this throng.

"By what authority are you doing these things? And who gave you this authority?" asked the High Priest sternly.

We can imagine the trepidation with which the Galilean fishermen heard this question from the lips of one whose office they had from childhood been taught to regard as that of the direct representative of Jehovah. What indeed could their friend, a carpenter, unlettered, unordained, say to such a question, a question which the High Priest was bound to ask?

They were amazed to see that Jesus was quite self possessed.



THE ENEMIES OF JESUS.

(Copyright, 1895, by J. J. Tissot. Courtesy of McClure Tissot Co.)

"Let me ask you a question first," replied Jesus courteously but firmly. "If you answer me fairly, then I will tell you by what authority I am doing these things. Who gave John the Baptist authority for his baptizing—did it come from heaven—or from men?"

The word of Jesus struck like a thunderbolt. Its import was clear as lightning. If they should say, "It came from men," what would this congregation, who looked upon John as a martyred saint, do to them? If they should acknowledge that it came from God, this successor of John would need only to ask, "Why then did you not believe in him?" to put them to still greater confusion.

"Answer me," said Jesus quietly.

"We—do not know," some of them stammered.

"Then I will not tell you by whose authority I act," responded Jesus, closing the conversation.

It was a dangerous position in which Jesus had been placed, for the priestly body, with the learned scribes as experts, assumed the right to prevent what they decided to be heretical discourses, in this plaza of the temple. Jesus had not only postponed their silencing Him at this time, but by sounding the venerated name of John He became sure of the favorable attention of the multitude.

A QUESTION OF PATRIOTISM.

The Gospels give us fragments of the addresses of Jesus in the temple, but they also tell us that He was interrupted that day by concerted endeavors on the part of His enemies to dislodge Him in the confidence of the people.

Some Pharisees, among them a few renegade Jews who were subservient courtiers of the Roman authority, met Him and, pretending that they admired His candor and fearlessness, asked Him to say frankly, whether He believed in giving tribute to Cæsar. If He should say, No, He would thereby assume to be a Messiah with revolutionary aims, and they could have Him arrested of high treason. If He should say, Yes, then they could persuade the people that He was no patriot.

"You hypocrites!" exclaimed Jesus in indignation. "Why do you ask? Show me some of the tribute money."

Some one held up a denarius.

"Whose portrait and name do you see on this coin?" asked Jesus of its owner.

“The Emperor’s.”

The very fact that they used the Roman coin showed that they owed at least protection to the Romans.

“Then what *belongs* to the Emperor pay to the Emperor—and pay God what belongs to God.”

Abruptly Jesus turned to the multitude before Him and said, “Beware of these Pharisees in their long silken robes, who insist upon your prostrations in the market places and who seize the principal seats in your synagogues and dinners. These are the men who gulp down widows’ houses. They strain at a gnat and swallow a camel. They tithe the tiniest garden seeds, and they leave undone justice and mercy and faith. Do as they say, but do not do as they do. Their deeds deserve nothing but condemnation.”

By this time his solicitous questioners had become invisible.

THE ENDEAVOR OF THE SADDUCEES TO ENTANGLE HIM.

The same day, inspired no doubt from the same source, came some Sadducees to try to entangle Him. The Sadducees were theologically the bitter enemies of the Pharisees, but they were at one in their wish to be undisturbed. For the Sadducees were an aristocratic party, chiefly of priests, holding the most conservative views, but chiefly interested in keeping their priestly privileges. Their special difference of thought with the Pharisees and the rest of their race was about immortality. The Jews in general had been taught by the Pharisees to believe that the souls of the righteous were to come back in their reanimated bodies to the earth, either as at present or renewed, and thus live immortally. The Sadducees, on the other hand, held the more ancient view that the soul continues in the shadowy land, called Sheol, forever. So they approached Him with an illustration by which they had probably often reduced to absurdity the matter-of-fact immortality of the Pharisees. It was about a woman who, being left a widow, and childless, according to the olden custom was married by her late husband’s brother, and, upon his death, by his other brothers, in turn until she had had seven husbands. “When they all come back to earth, whose wife will she be?”

Jesus would not take lightly the subject upon which He had the most certain convictions. His reply, in brief, was this: “You do not understand either our Scriptures or the power of God. The Scriptures tell us that God said: ‘I am the God of

Abraham, of Isaac and of Jacob.' Now the living God is not the God of poor lifeless shades; He is the God of the living. His sons never die; they are the sons of God, sons of the resurrection. And as for your question, the sons of this age marry, but the sons of that age do not live in a world of marrying. Their life is that of the Sons of the Mighty."

This reply, while it confuted the shallow reasoning of the Sadducees, was not any more satisfying to the Pharisees. Jesus evidently did not believe that immortality is an earthly paradise, devoted to housekeeping and money-getting. After His death His disciples remembered His noble faith, that there is no death to any of God's children.

By such responses as these Jesus strengthened His hold upon the eager attention of the capital city, especially intent at its central religious and patriotic festival upon whatever touched the matters of the soul.

A FEW FRIENDLY FACES.

During the rest of the day He was visited by various individuals and groups of a more friendly character. A candid scribe of the Pharisees, who asked Him for a summary of the Law, was charmed to hear the two golden sayings by which Jesus showed that He had caught the very spirit of the holy oracles. Some Greeks who were present in the city and who had listened to Him came to urge Him to go with them and teach in their own country. At this invitation from representatives of the nation which more than any other had sought for inward and outward beauty Jesus was deeply stirred.

"No," He said, "the time has come for me. Those who love their own lives, lose them. Yet I am indeed perplexed. . . . What shall I say? 'Father, bring me safe out of this time of trial?' No, for this very thing I come unto this time. I must say: 'Father, honor thine own name.'"

He would not flee. He might not now even teach elsewhere.



GREEKS ASKING TO SEE JESUS.

He must not give up His task. Here He must honor God, even if it cost Him His life.

On the way out of the temple, as they were returning to Bethany at evening, Jesus ever alert to the finer expressions of human goodness, called the attention of His friends to a touching incident. One poor widow came quietly up to one of the metal coffers by the door, placed there for freewill thank-offerings, down which pompous Pharisees were rattling their ostentatious gifts, and dropped in the smallest of coins, evidently all her livelihood for the day. "In the Father's sight," said Jesus kindly, "has she not put in more than anybody else?"

JESUS MUST BE DONE AWAY.

By the purging of the temple Jesus had made the priests His foes. His silencing of the Sadducees made the priestly party even more bitter against Him. The Pharisees had already condemned Him officially when He was in Galilee and now He had confronted them in Jerusalem and by denying their authority to silence Him had begun to turn the populace against them. It was evident that if Jesus were permitted to continue, He would end both the sacrificial system and the dominion of the scribes. He had steadily refused to stir up a revolt and had disowned any intention of subverting the Roman rule, but already Jerusalem, with its concourse of excited pilgrims from all Israel, was His audience and seemed likely to turn to His discipleship.

Persuasion, threats, intellectual fencing had failed to swerve the Nazarene. But one thing was left to do—assassinate Him. To this priests and scribes agreed, and in this cowardly purpose inveterate enemies joined hands.

THE CONSPIRACY.

Although the Pharisees had for a long time been trying to put a stop to the influence of Jesus, they fall into the back-



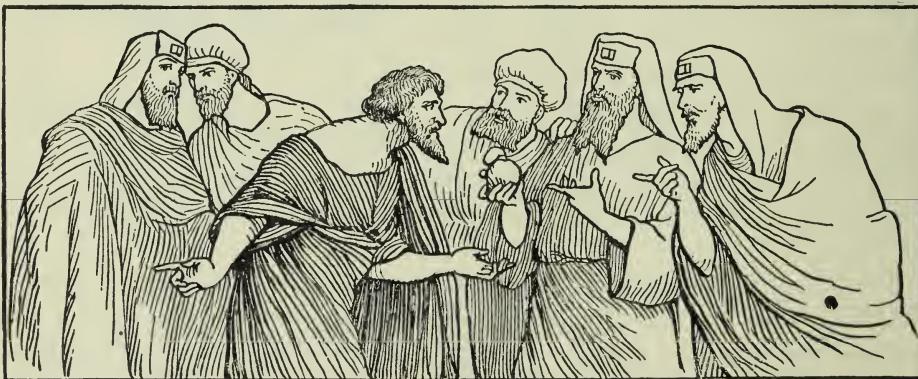
Copyright by J. J. Tissot.
THE PHARISEES PLOTTING TOGETHER.

ground as soon as the plot for His destruction gets under way. No doubt, some of them were numbered among the priests and the Sanhedrin, but the leadership in the destruction of Jesus was in the hands of the priestly party.

The first thought of the priests was that it would not do to throw Jerusalem into a turmoil during the feast, by interfering with the teaching of Jesus. It became evident, however, that He was taking such good advantage of this occasion that they must, at any cost, bring His work to a close before He got possession of the mind and heart of Jerusalem. It seemed wise, therefore, if possible, to arrest Him secretly some evening and get Him into the hands of the Romans, so that when His friends and partisans learned in the morning of His capture, the blame could be thrown upon the Romans, and it would be impossible to release Him. In order to bring this about it was desirable that some one should be found who knew the places where Jesus resorted, and who could lead a sufficient company of officers to surround and arrest Him. At the very moment of need such a person appeared in Judas Iscariot.

JUDAS THE TRAITOR.

The character of Judas has long been the subject of study. Dante places him in the lowest abyss of the Inferno, among those who were traitors to their kind. It has been common to think of him as the worst man who ever lived. John Ruskin was, no doubt, nearer right when he asserted that Judas was



JUDAS BARGAINING TO BETRAY JESUS.

“only a common money lover.” While he must have had some hopeful qualities in order to have attracted the attention of Jesus, the question “Will it pay?” soon began to be the test

by which he guided all his actions. During the slow progress of the Galilean ministry he had managed to become chosen treasurer of the small funds which the Twelve held in common, and in the use of these he had been a thief.

Apparently he had become convinced that the cause of Jesus was hopeless, and he determined to stand out from under it and leave his comrades and his Master in the lurch. Even in doing this he thought he might as well get whatever advantage there was possible. He had perhaps excused himself on the ground that it was plain that Jesus was going to be captured, anyway.

Just at the moment when the priests needed help he came to them and offered to co-operate in their plot. Whether they made a definite offer of money at the time, or promised to pay him a suitable amount, we do not know. It would hardly seem credible that Judas would have accepted so small a sum as the thirty pieces of silver, amounting in modern spending value to not more than as many dollars, unless indeed they persuaded him that his part in the conspiracy was such a trifling one that it deserved no larger recompense. It is a significant fact that Judas sold his Master for what was the price of a common slave. He agreed to dog Jesus' footsteps, and at the first suitable opportunity to discover to them some place where Jesus would be in retirement during the evening, when they would place in his charge a sufficient body of soldiers to apprehend Him.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

How was Jesus received by the Jerusalem people?

What challenge did the priests make Jesus when He began to teach in the temple?

How did Jesus answer them?

What was the dilemma in which He placed the priests by this reply?

What question about taxation did the enemies of Jesus ask Him?

What were the two difficult positions, in one of which they hoped to place Him through His reply?

What was Jesus' answer?

What opinion did Jesus express of the Pharisees?

By what question did the Sadducees endeavor to perplex Jesus?

What was their idea of the future life?

What idea was held by the Pharisees?

What idea did Jesus express?

Tell about some friendly people who came to Jesus.

Tell the story of the widow.

To what determination did the priests feel driven?

What was the character of Judas?

What part did he play in the plan to take the life of Jesus?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Locate on the chart of the temple in your textbook, by dotted lines, the place where the priests, the Sadducees and Jesus entered the temple, and mark by crosses the place where they met each other. (The class will discuss the accuracy of this work and transfer it to their own books.)

For what different purposes were the following gifts applied: The temple tax, the tax concerning which the priests asked Jesus, and the contribution made by the widow?

State in one hundred words some of the ennobling influences which had surrounded Judas during his acquaintance with Jesus.

What motive led the Pharisees and priests, who usually differed with each other, to unite in a conspiracy against Jesus?

What would probably have occurred if Jesus had been left unhindered in Jerusalem?

How is a modern Christian ever a traitor to Jesus?

CHAPTER XXXII.

JESUS' ATTITUDE IN THE FACE OF DEATH.

Jesus' faith in personal immortality: Mark 14:28; 12:25-27; John 14: 1-3, 18, 19.

Jesus' faith in the future of the Kingdom: Mark 13:4-23; Matt. 24: 14.

The last supper: Mark 14:12-31.

The agony in Gethsemane: Mark 14:26, 32-42.

Jesus knew that He must die.

He was familiar with the history of other prophets. He had watched the persecution of John. He recognized the spirit of the men about Him.

Just as He was at the summit of His opportunity, He was to be sacrificed to the selfish interests of the two dominant religious parties of His race. What was the attitude of Jesus in the face of such a tragedy?

Jesus was not unprepared for His fate. The Gospels imply that ever since His spiritual experience upon Mount Hermon the conviction had grown that, whatever the response Jerusalem might make to His teachings, He would be but one more of her prophets whom she should slay.

The whole attitude of Jesus toward death is summed up in His word to the Greeks who came to Him during the Passover: "The way for a man to lose his life is to love it too much." In saying this Jesus stood beside other heroes who could say with our modern Stevenson:

" My undissuaded heart I hear
Whisper courage in my ear . . .
To laugh, to love, to live, to die."

No doubt, like others who have found death in the path of duty, He did not know all that His death should do, but He

knew, as the soldier, the sailor, the father knows who chooses to die when to live and let others die means dishonor, that life reaches its noblest estate only when it is sacrificed. Many have believed that the description of the suffering servant in the 53d of Isaiah, who was "despised and rejected of men" and "led to slaughter," persuaded Jesus that it was within the Father's will that the Messiah should die in shame, rather than immediately triumph, while, after He "poured out his soul unto death," in some mysterious way He should "see of the travail of his soul and be satisfied" in that He had been the means of rescue to many.

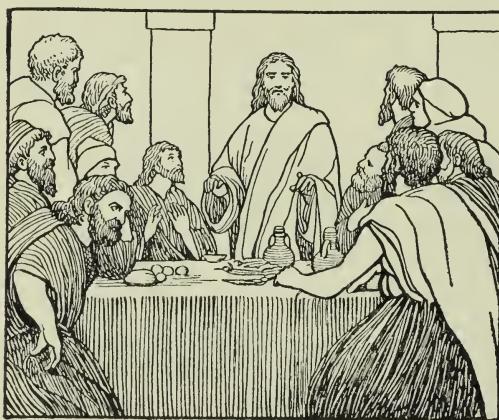
JESUS' FAITH IN IMMORTALITY.

But though Jesus expected to die, He did not expect His spirit to perish. As we have learned from His dialogue with the Sadducees, His faith in the Father lifted Him above such a despair. He did not even think, as they did, that He might survive as a lifeless shade in Sheol. Nor did He accept the belief of the Pharisees that, while a few heroes, like Enoch and Moses and Elijah, had been translated to the heavens, most men would come back, in their reanimated bodies, to this earth when it was renovated for them. We may accept as true to the conviction of Jesus, if not His very words, the sayings which John represents Him as giving to His disciples on the night before His death: "In my Father's house are many abiding places. There I am going, to make a place ready for you." But that Jesus did not think His life after death was to be separate in knowledge and interest from this earth and His friends upon it is seen by the other words which John gives: "If I go I will send the Comforter to you He shall take my words and shall explain them to you I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice." In some spiritual way Jesus expected that He would very soon manifest Himself to His friends in their daily life. This Comforter, this "Spirit of Christ" as Paul calls it, is to continue the Messianic work, for He will "convict the world of its sin, bring to it a new conception of righteousness and set up a new standard of judgment" and gradually "guide the disciples into all truth." In more than one of the Gospels the promise is that His presence shall be a help in doing their daily duties and in setting up there the Kingdom of Heaven.

JESUS' EXPECTANCY FOR THE KINGDOM.

Concerning the future of that kingdom on earth we find it hard to learn just how far Jesus was able to foresee. At least one quotation crept into the Gospels from an apocalyptic (that is, an allegorical-prophetic) book written many years after the death of Jesus, and was attributed to His lips. Such enthusiastic "tracts in bad times" were favorite reading in the days of trial in the early church. We have one such in our New Testament in the Book of Revelation. We find in them all the idea that in the immediate future are to be persecutions and trials and that one of these early trials is to be the destruction of the city of Jerusalem. Surely Jesus was statesman enough to realize that the restless and uncompromising spirit of the Pharisees, which soon became well nigh insane in its bigotry and obstinacy, could bring nothing else but bloodshed and ruin. It is pleasant to think that He may have had the tender foresight to warn His followers to avoid the horrors of the siege that came during the next generation, so that, as history tells us, the Christian community made its escape while yet the gates were open.

There is no doubt too that Jesus believed that the Kingdom of Heaven was to become worldwide. His Father was the Father of all men everywhere, and not merely of Jews. From His early ministry the great parables of the Sower, the Leaven, the Great Supper, the Lost Sheep, had taken for granted the exceeding broadness of the love and purpose of God. His heart, that had been so quick to welcome the faith of a Roman centurion, a Syro-Phœnician woman, the Samaritans and the Greeks, was in accord with the noblest of



CHRIST COMFORTING HIS DISCIPLES AT THE
PASSOVER SUPPER

the prophets, who, like the author of the 87th Psalm, sang of:

"Rahab and Babylon as among them that know me.
Behold, Philistia, and Tyre, with Ethiopia;
This one was born there,"

or who, like Joel, represented God as saying:

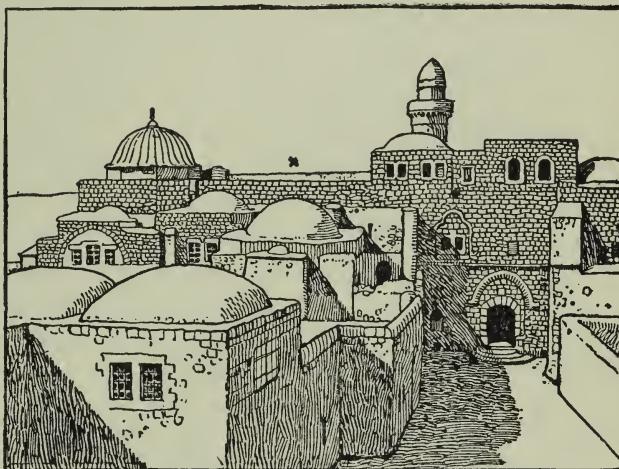
“Afterward I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh And whosoever calleth upon the name of Jehovah shall be saved.”

The Christian world has rightly accepted as the resurrection message of its Master those words found in Mark:

“Go ye into all the world,
And preach the Gospel to every creature.”

THE LAST SUPPER.

On Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday of the Passover week Jesus taught in the temple. Wednesday and Thursday it is believed He spent in solitary rest in Bethany or upon the slopes of the Mount of Olives. Thursday Jesus sent Peter and John into Jerusalem to complete a private arrangement which He had made with a friend that His guest-chamber should be fitted with a table and couches so that Jesus might there celebrate the Passover with the Twelve. Jesus had in some way become aware of the alienation of Judas, and He designed that Judas might not, by discovering beforehand where they were to meet, be able to arrest Him before He had said His parting words to His friends.



THE TOMB OF DAVID.

The room shown as the cenaculum, or upper chamber, is in this building under the cross.

When the Twelve came into the room where the couches were arranged for the ceremonial, there was an unseemly crowding toward the head of the table, in order that each might secure one of the seats of honor. Jesus uttered no rebuke, but after all had reclined He retired to an ante-room, and soon came in, his cloak removed, girdled with a towel and carrying a basin of water—in short, attired as a slave. Silently He knelt at the back of each couch and began to wash His disciples' feet. All were ashamed to see the servile task performed by

their Teacher, though only Simon objected. When Jesus was seated again, He explained himself. "Do you understand what I have been doing? The kings of the Greeks and the Romans are accustomed to lord it over them. But it is not to be so with you. On the contrary, those who are greatest must become like the youngest, and the chief is he who serves."

As they were eating the supper Jesus said: "This very night they will strike down your shepherd, and His sheep will be scattered. Simon, listen. The Tempter has demanded leave to sift you like wheat. But I have prayed for you, Simon, that your faith shall never fail. And I look to you, when you have been turned again, to strengthen your brothers."

Simon sprang to his feet.

"Me fail?" he shouted. "I shall never fail you. If every one else falls away from you, I never will. With you I am ready to go to dungeon, yes, even to death."

The rest, too, excitedly swore an oath of eternal allegiance.

"And yet," said Jesus sadly, "I fear that before cockcrow you will more than once have disowned me."

"Are any of you armed?" Jesus asked anxiously.

Learning that some were thus protected against surprise, Jesus continued His conversation.

JESUS' MEMORIAL.

After the meal was over Jesus took some of the unleavened flat cakes and an untouched cup of wine, and stood up. He broke the bread in pieces, and gave a morsel to each, and said,

"Take it and eat it. This is my body."

Then He took the wine cup and carried it to each:

"This," he said, "is my covenant-blood."

And Paul says that he added, "Continue to do this as a remembrance of me."

In after years the early Christians observed this custom. At the end of a common meal, in the home or where several of them were together, they would set



HEAD OF CHRIST.

From da Vinci's "Last Supper."



THE LAST SUPPER.
From a painting by Eamans.

apart some bread and some wine, and as they solemnly ate and drank, one would say, repeating the words of Jesus, "This is my body; this is my covenant-blood." And as they did so with reverent and loving hearts, the spirit of Jesus became real to them, and gave fresh meaning to the words of Jesus.

For this was Jesus' last and greatest parable. Among all the words that Jesus spoke the night before His death, these two are conspicuous. "This is my body"—I am your daily food. "This is my covenant-blood"—I am helping you to keep the covenant of love between you and the Father. These are the ways that the Comforter, His Spirit, brings the living Christ unto our daily life.

Because of abuses that crept in, the Lord's Supper was by and by separated from the daily meal, but it was the intention of Jesus that every common meal, shared together in brotherhood, should be a Lord's Supper; and that a cup of cold water, given in love, should be a veritable holy communion.



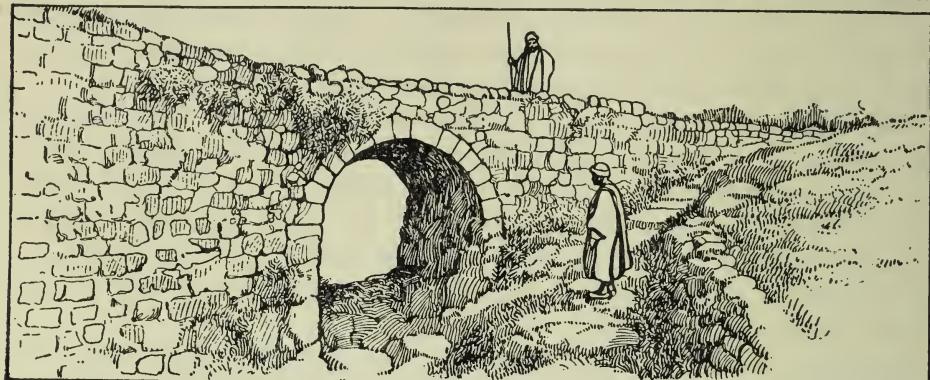
THE LAST SUPPER. BY LEONARDO DA VINCI.

This picture represents the consternation of the disciples on being told by Jesus that one of them should betray Him. Their names beginning on the left are: Bartholomew, James the son of Alphæus, Andrew, Judas, Peter leaning behind Judas, John, James the brother of John leaning behind Thomas, Thomas, Philip, Matthew, Thaddæus, and Simon the Cananæan.

After the last supper Jesus led His disciples out through the eastern gate of the city and down over the bridge across the Brook Kidron, toward Bethany. On the way up the slope of the Mount of Olives He turned in at an olive orchard and there paused.

A young man from the city, possibly the son of the owner of the house of the upper room, seems to have followed them in the darkness. Probably he gave the alarm when the soldiers appeared. He barely escaped just after the arrest of Jesus,

leaving his cloak in the hands of one of the soldiers. To him we probably are indebted for an account of what occurred in



From a photograph.

BRIDGE OVER THE BROOK KIDRON, NEAR ABSALOM'S TOMB.

This brook is full in winter and dry in summer. Christ crossed it many times during the last week of His life.

the orchard. This young man has been supposed to be the evangelist Mark.

Jesus left eight of the disciples near the orchard gate and took Peter, James and John with Him as He walked among the shadows from the Passover moon, into the quieter seclusion of its interior. Ere He left the three He told them that His anguish was well nigh unto death, and He entreated them to stay awake while He went a little further and engaged in prayer.

The words of the prayer of Jesus in Gethsemane have always aroused the most reverent thoughtfulness of Christians.

The substance of the petition was that a certain "cup" of anguish might be removed from His lips, but if not, that He might be given by the Father strength to drink it. Perhaps none of us fully know what this "cup" was. It was surely not the fear of death, though one so young and strong and vital might well shudder at such an un-



From a photograph.

VIEW IN THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE.

timely end. The curse and shame of His approaching death were certainly no minor grief. More deeply, though, Jesus felt in His loving heart the agony of being rejected by those He

loved. His soul also stood aghast at the horror of such blind and cruel wickedness as that of Judas and the priests. Most keenly one realizes, however, that at that hour He felt the desire not to leave His disciples in their blindness and faintheartedness, but to continue personally the great and divine work to which He had given His life, and not to die until He had seen the Kingdom no longer languishing in weakness, but coming in power and blessing.

His agony was so great that the watcher in the shadows reported His countenance bedewed as if with drops of blood. Again and again He came back to His three friends to be sustained by their human sympathy. Finally, in compassion at their exhaustion, He let them sleep. Then the Divine Spirit entered His heart and comforted Him. Thus His prayer was answered, and He arose, strong and fearless, to meet what was before Him.



From a photograph.

OLD OLIVE TREE IN GETHSEMANE.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.
How had Jesus become convinced that He must die?

What relation did He believe that He, as immortal, would have to His disciples?

In what sense did Jesus see the coming of the Kingdom as present and as future?

How extensive did He believe the domain of His Kingdom was to become?

What occurred in the upper room just before the last supper?

What dialogue did Jesus hold with Simon Peter?

How did He reveal the treachery of Judas?

What two symbolic acts did each perform after the supper?

Just what did that mean?

How were they regarded in the early church?

Where did Jesus and His disciples go after the supper?

What took place in the olive orchard?

How do you explain the agony of Jesus?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Trace upon the map of Jerusalem and its surroundings, by a dotted line, the route of Jesus from the probable place of

the last supper across Jerusalem and to Gethsemane. (The class will copy this in their own books.)

Find out what the opinion of scholars is as to the relation of this last supper to the Passover Feast. (See the article "Lord's Supper" or "Eucharist," in a Bible dictionary.)

Do you think Jesus intended to make this supper a permanent ceremonial? Why?

What diverse views have been held in the Christian church concerning the meaning of the Lord's Supper?

Just how is the Lord's Supper helpful to a Christian?

CHAPTER XXXIII.

BETRAYED, DENIED, CONDEMNED.

The betrayal and arrest: Mark 14:43–52.

The examination before the Jewish authorities: Mark 14:44–65; 15:1.

The denial by Peter: Mark 14:66–72.

The trial before Pilate: Mark 15:2–5; John 18:28–38.

The examination by Herod: Luke 23:7–12.

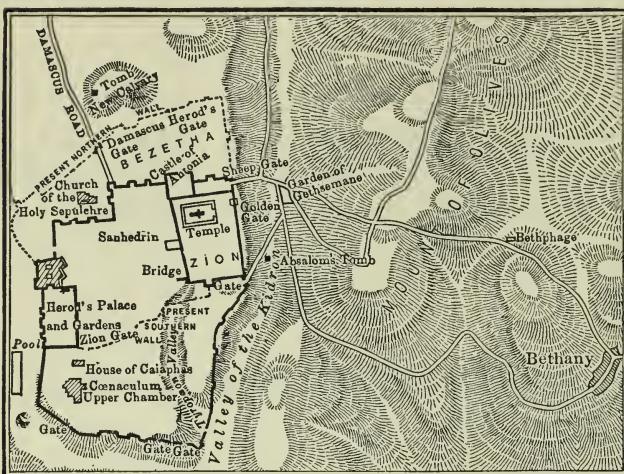
The persuading of Pilate by the Jews to condemn Him: Mark 15:6–14; John 19:1–15.

The condemnation of Jesus: Mark 15:15–19.

THE BETRAYAL.

In the meantime Judas had slipped from the upper room and hastened to the palace of the High Priest, and Caiaphas had summoned to his aid a mob with perhaps a sprinkling of the temple guard.

It is quite possible that Judas led the band first to the upper room, and finding Jesus already departed, set out for Gethsemane. Stealing for-



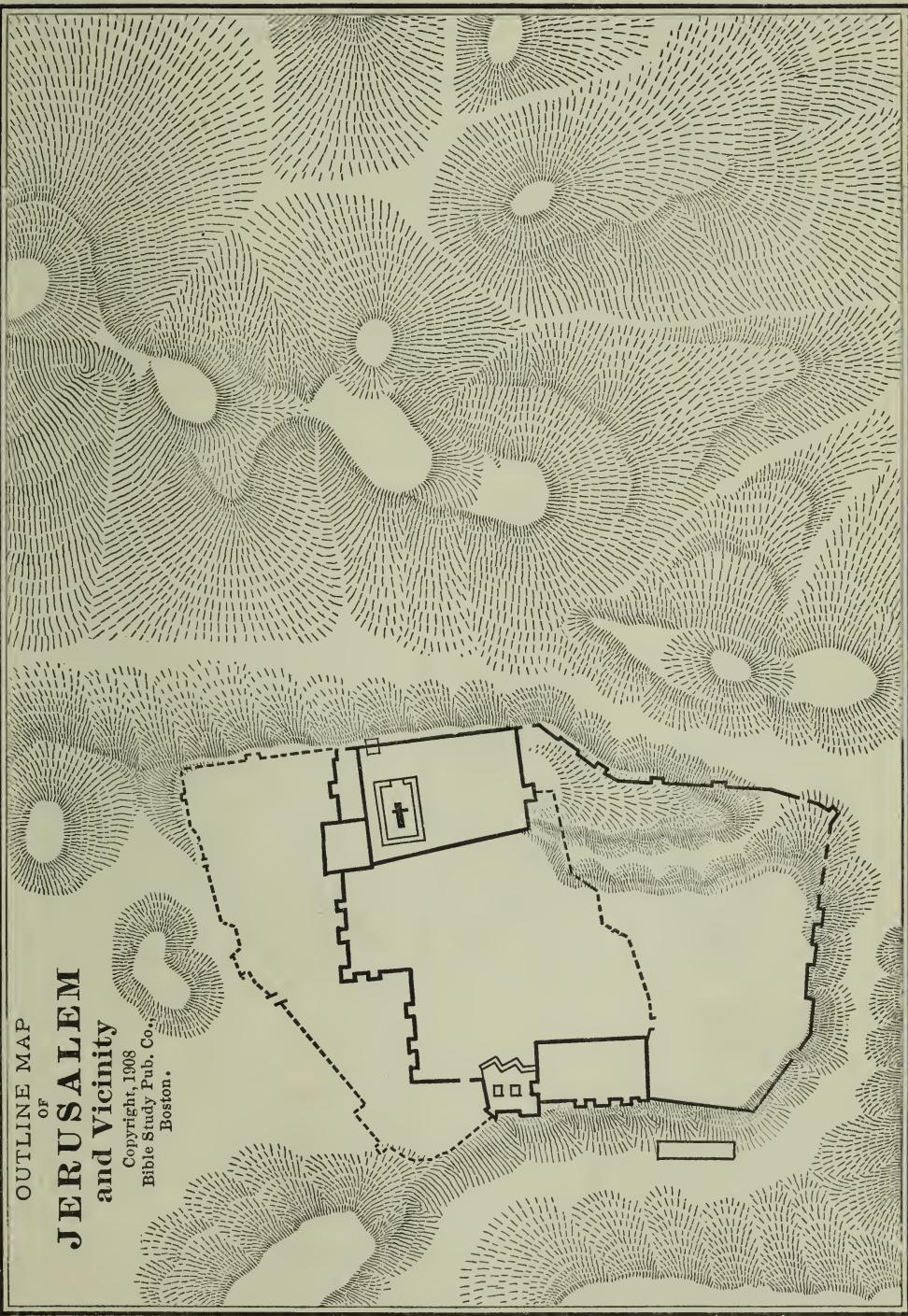
MAP OF JERUSALEM AND VICINITY.

ward in advance of the main body of the soldiers and temple guards, Judas had probably discovered, as he would suspect that Jesus would pause in this favorite resting place. He surrounded the orchard with men and led a squad in through the gateway. Many were armed with staves, and a number carried lanterns and torches, although the moon was full, so that they might search in the dark shadows, if Jesus should be in hiding. The deep impression which Jesus had made upon Jerusalem, and the fears which the priests felt as to His possible resistance or escape, may be judged by the careful arrangements that were made to arrest Him. So that they might watch their own triumph, some of His enemies accompanied the party.

Jesus aroused His three friends, and then the others who were resting beside the gate, and urged them to make their escape. Judas entered the orchard in advance of the rest as if to



THE KISS OF JUDAS.



make believe that he was innocent of the presence of the soldiers behind him, and came up and embraced Jesus in pretended anxiety. This was the prearranged signal so that they might not seize the wrong victim.

"Is this the way," asked Jesus, with revulsion, "that you betray the Son of man—with a kiss?" Then He advanced boldly to meet the crowd. His first manly instinct was to assure them that He was not intending flight.

"Why have you come here as if against a thief, with swords and staves? Why did you not arrest me in the temple where I have been teaching daily?"

This brave act of Jesus was not merely in defense of His own honor, but also to shelter His friends. He threw Himself between the soldiers and the Twelve, and they, after perhaps a brief and ineffective attempt at defense, forsook Him and fled.

THE JEWISH EXAMINATION.

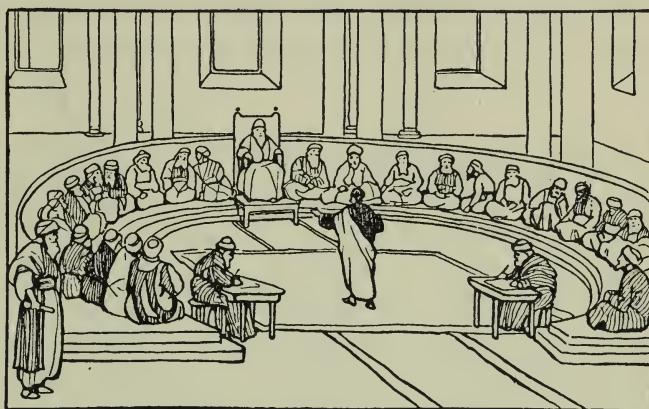
The process of condemning Jesus to death was as follows: First, He was examined before the Jewish authorities and



Copyright, 1896, by J. J. Tissot.
ANNAS AND CAIAPHAS.

adjudged guilty, but as the Sanhedrin had no right to take away life, He was next tried before the Roman authorities. He was brought before Annas and Caiaphas for a preliminary examination, in the hope that He might say something which could be used as an excuse for condemning Him. This examination took place in the presence of an irregular assembly of some of the Sanhedrin which had been hastily brought together. As night sessions of the Sanhedrin were not lawful, the method of procedure was illegal throughout. Jesus was allowed no legal representative and no adequate opportunity for defense. When He protested against the unlawful proceedings He was smitten upon the face by an underling of Annas, and, although a prisoner was not allowed to incriminate himself, He was forced upon oath to declare whether He was or was not the Messiah. This He did not deny, and as all the testimony which had been hastily brought together was

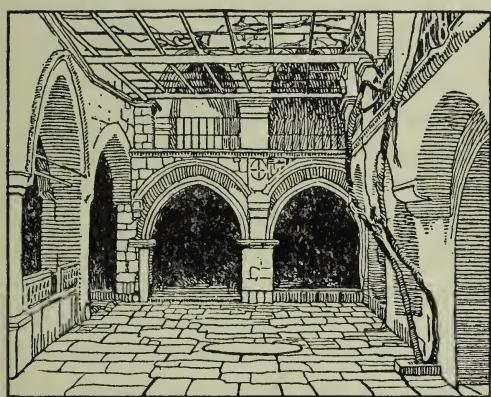
foolishly inconclusive, this one statement was accepted as sufficient for His condemnation. His enemies also made much of some statement which Jesus had made that week regarding the destruction of the temple. What Jesus had meant was that it was time its abuse came to an end. What they claimed that He meant was that He proposed the sacrilege of attempting to destroy it with His own hands.



THE SANHEDRIN.

PETER.

In the meantime, Simon Peter, who had found his way into the courtyard of the palace of Caiaphas, being suddenly questioned by some who thought they recognized him as having been in the olive orchard, impulsively and weakly denied his Master. It was while he was doing this with oaths, that Jesus was led across the courtyard. The anguish of the spectacle of the disloyalty of His trusted friend was added to the burdens of



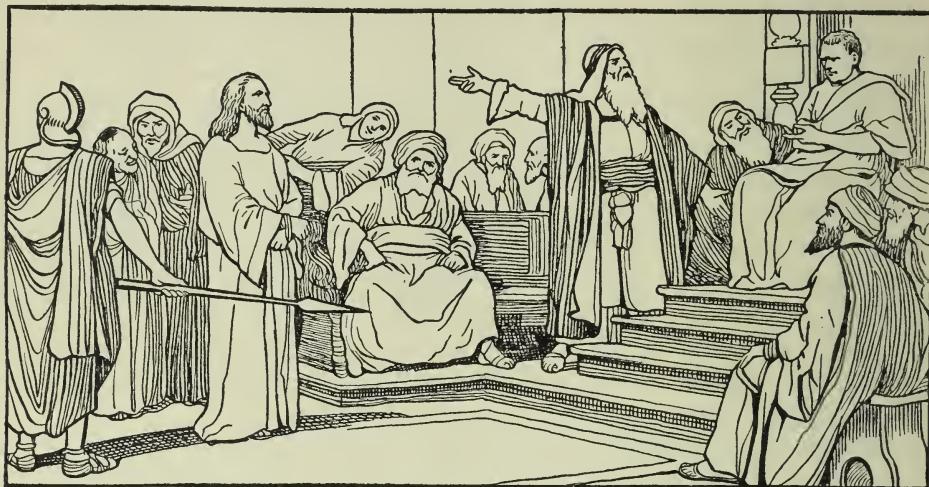
COURTYARD IN THE HOUSE OF CAIAPHAS.

this sorrowful night. Judas, too, suddenly saw the enormity of his offense, and in the early morning fruitlessly endeavored to make some reparation by restoring the fruits of his treachery.

JESUS' TRIAL BEFORE PILATE.

The formal trial of Jesus was that before the Roman judge, Pontius Pilate, the procurator of Judea and Samaria, who had his capital at Cæsarea, upon the coast of the Mediterranean.

There was, however, a smaller palace and hall of justice in Jerusalem. To him, in the early morning, they led Jesus. Pilate came forth to the elevated platform, where he frequently



THE JEWS URGING PILATE TO CONDEMN JESUS.

made judicial decisions, and to this elevated place Jesus also was lifted, to stand before him. Pilate, as a Roman, indifferent to Jewish beliefs and customs, could hardly have realized how monstrous was the spectacle of the priests of the Jewish nation leading their Messiah to a foreign judge, in order to demand His death. The charges for which the priests had condemned

Jesus would not have interested Pilate. What did he care about blasphemy of the Jewish God? They tried first to get Pilate to condemn Jesus upon their own unsupported statements, but Pilate was too shrewd an administrator to do this. They, therefore, charged that Jesus was a revolutionary and was ambitious to become king. In the private examination Pilate soon learned that the only claim of kingship Jesus made was that He was king in the realm of truth. The word "truth" did not especially interest Pilate. He lived in the realm of expediency,

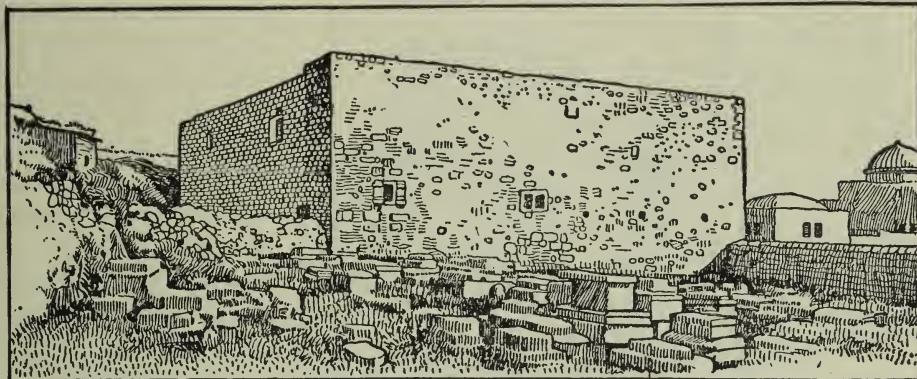


THE CASTLE ANTONIA.

rather than that of truth, as the events of the morning soon

showed. Pilate brought Jesus back to the platform and asserted that he found Him innocent.

Instead of releasing Him at once, as a judge should have done, he caught at the suggestion that the deeds which had



SO-CALLED HOUSE OF CAIAPHAS, NOW AN ARMENIAN MONASTERY.

been alleged against Him had some of them been performed in Galilee. Desiring to make friends with Herod Antipas, with whom he had quarreled, he sent Jesus over to the palace of Herod, who had come down to the Passover in search of casual amusement. To Herod, the murderer of His best friend, who strove to incite Jesus to some religious discussion, Jesus was mute. Resolving not to be cheated out of his pleasure, Herod scornfully dressed Jesus in the mock robes of a king and sent Him back to Pilate.

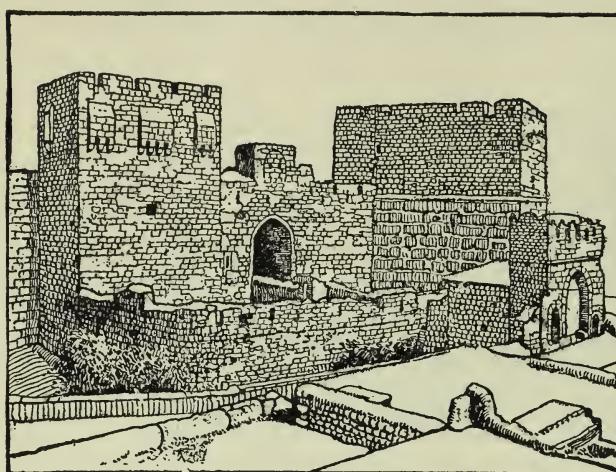
PLAYING UPON THE FEARS OF PILATE.

Again Pilate asserted publicly that the man was innocent, but again, instead of releasing Him, he endeavored to please his restless subjects by the cruel injustice of ordering Jesus to be scourged before He was set free. He hoped in this way to excite their pity and satisfy their desire for revenge. The Roman scourging was so cruel a punishment that men fainted, and often died beneath it. To the physical torment of the scourging the brutal soldiers added their curses and heartless persecutions, treating His almost insensate body like that of a brute beast. Again Pilate started to free Jesus. Noting that a large company of citizens had gathered in the open space before the platform, he appealed to the multitude, following a custom observed at the Passover Feast. He offered to set free any culprit they might choose. Selecting a brigand and murderer, who had started an

insurrection, he offered them the choice between Jesus and this Barabbas. To his consternation the crowd, either desirous to

show favor to a supposed patriot, or incited by the remonstrances of the priests, insisted upon the freedom of Barabbas. Then Pilate determined to show his excessive generosity and satisfy his own conscience, by releasing them both.

The priests, who had skilfully taken advantage of the weaknesses of Pilate through this whole morning, now



HEROD'S PALACE AND TOWER OF HIPPICUS.

Nothing of the original Herod's palace now remains, but the lower portion of the massive tower of Hippicus still stands as left by Titus, to show future generations the strength of the city he had conquered.

brought to bear the strongest argument, one by which they had always been able in the past to play on the fears of their governor. They now threatened that if he released Jesus and thus showed that he condoned such a revolutionary, he would prove thereby that he was not a friend of the emperor, and that they would complain of him to Rome. Pilate could not afford to have such a scrutiny made of his administration, for it had been stained with injustice. Indeed, when such an examination was made a few years later, he promptly lost his position. He, therefore, capitulated instantly and ordered Jesus to be turned over to a squad of soldiers to be executed.

THE DEMEANOR OF JESUS.

This hasty summary does not do justice to the attitude of Jesus through these terrible hours. Though exhausted by the excitement of the previous day and night and by loss of sleep and food, Jesus preserved His self-control. He endured stoically the torments of the scourge and the insults that preceded and followed. He accepted His Messianic calling, though He knew that a denial would save His life. He defended Himself quietly, but by every legal means, when He was examined by Pilate,

and He even told him pityingly that the blame was not so much his own as that of the conscienceless men who had brought the innocent victim before him, and who had insisted upon having their own way. Pilate seems to have been gradually won to a sincere admiration by the demeanor of Jesus, who had before this moment been to him a complete stranger. Toward the close of the hearing he led the Galilean to the front of the platform and made a final appeal to the citizens of Jerusalem, saying "Behold! the Man!" The spectacle of Jesus—His hands fettered, His shoulders covered with the faded military cloak, His head bleeding from the crown of thorns which had been crushed upon His forehead, His face the expression of innocence and virtue—might well have excited the sympathy of the most heartless. Had this been a Galilean throng they would, no doubt, have pleaded for His release and perhaps demanded it, but this was largely a company of Jerusalem people, many of whom perhaps had listened to the teachings of Jesus, but who had not the strength of mind nor the conscience to contend vigorously against their religious leaders for justice.

Four soldiers led Jesus. Bowing beneath the burden of a Roman cross which was ready at hand, and escorted by a small company of soldiers and by His eager enemies, He walked wearily along the northward lane which led to the hill of execution.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What did Judas do from the time he left the upper room until the betrayal of Jesus?

How did Jesus protect His disciples in the orchard?

How did Judas signify to the soldiers which individual was Jesus?

How did Jesus manifest personal courage in Gethsemane?

What were the steps of the Jewish examination?

Describe Peter's denial of Jesus.

Describe the trial before Pilate.

Why did Pilate not release Jesus after acquitting him?

To whom did Pilate send Jesus for examination?

What order did Pilate give when Herod sent Jesus back?

What offer did Pilate make to the multitude?

With what result?

What offer did he make next?

How was this met?

What did Pilate finally decide?

Try to state a modern instance in which one may have a responsible decision to make, in which there is the temptation to weaken, like Pilate.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Locate the traditional sites of the palaces of Caiaphas and of Pilate, and trace by dotted line the route of Jesus from Gethsemane to the cross. (The class will copy this upon their own maps.)

In what respects was the Jewish trial of Jesus legal, and in what illegal?

Show how Jesus used proper means to defend His own innocence.

Why was Jesus silent to Caiaphas and to Herod, and why did He answer Pilate freely?

State in fifty words the varying attitudes of Simon Peter to Jesus from the time he made His acquaintance until he denied Him.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE DEATH OF JESUS.

The last hours of Jesus: Matt. 27:32-44; Mark 15:21-32; Luke 23:26-43; John 19:16-27.

The death of Jesus: Matt. 27:45-50; Mark 15:33-41; John 19:28-37.

The burial of Jesus: Mark 15:42-46.

THE APPROACH TO THE CROSS.

The death of Jesus may be studied in many ways. We could think of that union of priestly hatred and Roman cruelty which crowned His agonies with insult and added the refinement of torture to a death of shame. We could dwell upon the circumstances of a day which began with the curses of a senseless mob, proceeded with the gambling of hired ruffians for the clothing of the victim, was made hideous by the curses of the malefactors who hung beside Him and which ended in the despair of all His friends. We could urge sympathy for one who was forsaken by tried comrades, who walked to death in utter loneliness, and who found His last sympathy from the hearts of stranger women, His last co-operation in the shoulders of a stranger forced at the point of Roman spears to help Him with His cross, His last deed of comfort from His executioner, and His last disciple in a dying thief. In short, it is easy to see the cross as the very emblem of pathos and tragedy, and its pathos has melted many hearts in compassion and even unto discipleship, while its tragedy has forced upon a forgetting world the eternal misery which sin brings to this world of men.

It is more fair to Jesus and a truer approach to His spirit if we study His death in the light of His own attitude toward it and His own demeanor during the crucifixion.

THE ATTITUDE AND DEMEANOR OF JESUS.

Death had no terror for Jesus. To Him it was not finality. It was but the way by which men go to their Father's house. Since He had outgrown the crude conception of a Sheol of lifeless spirits as the house of the dead and disowned the imperfect faith of the men of His time that the abode of God was reserved for a select sainthood of great men and angels, to Him death was the release of the soul for its immediate entrance into the Father's House. That He should die so young, that He should

perish in shame and thus seem to close up the hope of the Kingdom, that He should not be permitted to remain as the champion and leader on earth of His faint-hearted followers, that He should be the victim of the demonic hatred of the leaders of a nation which He loved and was endeavoring to lead out into its spiritual rights—these were bitter burdens, and their load constituted the agony in the orchard of Gethsemane. But for all these He had prepared His heart on the mountain in upper Galilee, and even in Gethsemane He had patiently yielded to the necessity which tried both heart and faith.

The one great thought that sustained Jesus on the cross was the one by whose strength He had lived: the thought of the Father. He had all His life believed that the heart of the universe is love, and He had taught men that their only right attitude toward one another should be that which the Father has toward them, the attitude of unavenging, forgiving love. If Jesus at any time during the week of His passion had distrusted for a moment the love of the Father, He would have avoided the cross. The proof of His implicit and unshaken faith in that love is seen in His willingness to die upon the cross. He Himself would show to men even to the last the Father's spirit, that of forgiving love.

Jesus also had faith in the victory of love. He believed it to be the strongest thing in the universe. Though God is baffled by the unlovingness of men, Jesus was sure that the secret of conquering hatred was simply more love. God would love men into loving Him. It was the duty of Jesus to love men to the last, believing that His ultimate expression of love, by dying for men, would do what even His loving life had not accomplished. So Jesus believed that even His death would contribute to the welfare of His Kingdom, and the personal good of men. He had used mystic expressions which suggest His hope. "The corn of wheat," John tells us He said, "must first fall into the ground and die, and then it brings forth much fruit." That His death was to release a mighty energy into the world He felt certain, and expressed this when He said, "I have come to cast fire upon the earth. I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened until it be accomplished." That His death was to help accomplish the release for which the Messiah was to come He announced when He said that He was "to give His life a ransom for many" and again, at the last supper, when, thinking of the covenant expressed in the burnt-offering of

Moses, He said, "This is my covenant-blood which is shed for many."

Jesus therefore went to His cross not as a victim, but as one who gave His life for others. He did, it is true, defend Himself before Pilate with all the dignity of an innocent citizen, and yet when He was offered by the priests His life if He would deny His mission, He reiterated boldly His office as the Messiah. He shrank, as was natural to a loving and brave spirit, from the scenes of hatred upon which He was to enter and the form of death which might cause His friends to lose faith in His leadership, but His shrinking did not prevent His going steadily forward along a way so dark that none but the Father could see light at the end of it. That which had been the object of His life work, the Kingdom of God, was no doubt the chief solace of His death. That was not a thing of flesh and blood merely and it was not susceptible of bodily death. It had already come; the seed He had Himself been sowing, men and women were springing up on every hand who were to be the good grain of the Kingdom, and the world was ready for the harvest. He Himself, living with the Father, though not in visible and earthly glory, would be at the very heart of that Kingdom and able by His spiritual presence to give it sunshine and rain for its fuller increase. Such a vision, even though perhaps not seen in detail, strengthened Jesus to meet His end.

THE WORDS FROM THE CROSS.

We are told in all the stories of the crucifixion how alert and characteristic was the spirit of Jesus until He breathed His last. Though worn out by loss of sleep, lack of food and the tortures of the scourging, Jesus bore His cross as long as His strength permitted, and, even almost fainting, was so oblivious of His own physical condition as to express to the pitying women who lined the lanes His sympathy for their future, His patriotic hopes, and even His indignation at



JESUS BEARING HIS CROSS.



GOLGOTHA.
From a painting by J. L. Gérôme.

the prostitution of justice by the priests. While being nailed to the cross, He refused the stupefying drug which would have rendered His last hours partly unconscious. He bore the agony of His transfixion in prayer, and was heard by the soldiers to beg the Father for their forgiveness because of their ignorance. The fever and the congestion of crucifying usually produce great excitement followed by the deepest mental depression. Even here the soul of Jesus conquered the body. The priests, who had followed their victim to Golgotha, wrought to renewed rage by the taunt which Pilate had placed upon the superscription, "This is what becomes of a king of the Jews," gloated over the sufferings of Jesus by reminding Him of His prophecy that their cult should lose its control, and cried at Him: "Here is the one who was going to destroy our temple and then rebuild it in three days. He saved others; let him save himself, if he is indeed the Messiah."

ΙΗΣΟΥΣ ΟΜΑΙΩΡΑΙΟΣ ΟΒΑΞΙΖΕΥΤΩΜΟΥΔΑΙΩΜ
IESVS NAZARINVS REKIVDEORVM

THE INSCRIPTION ON THE CROSS.

To this taunt Jesus made no direct reply, yet He could not have failed to have had it in mind when He said to the repentant thief, "To-day (not in three days) we shall be together in Paradise." His invincible soul found a servant for the Kingdom in this brigand, won a victory for it in His death, and promised that, instead of the Pharisaic Sheol, this redeemed soul should enter at once with Him into the presence of the Father. The physical depression, like the agony of the transfixion, He met in prayer, a prayer from a Psalm learned in His childhood. His inquiring soul dared to ask "Why" even at its departure; He faced the blackness of desertion; yet, as Dr. Stalker so finely said, "No one is forsaken who can say, My God." The human interests clung to Him to the end. He appealed to the brotherhood in the heart of His tormentors by asking them to quench His thirst, and, according to John, even prepared for the future care of His mother, who was present at His death. Indeed He was not allowed to forget mankind during His sufferings, for apparently He was made a spectacle by the roadside and was surrounded by a mob of blatant foes and secret sympathizers, some of whom gathered up the broken syllables of His latest hours.

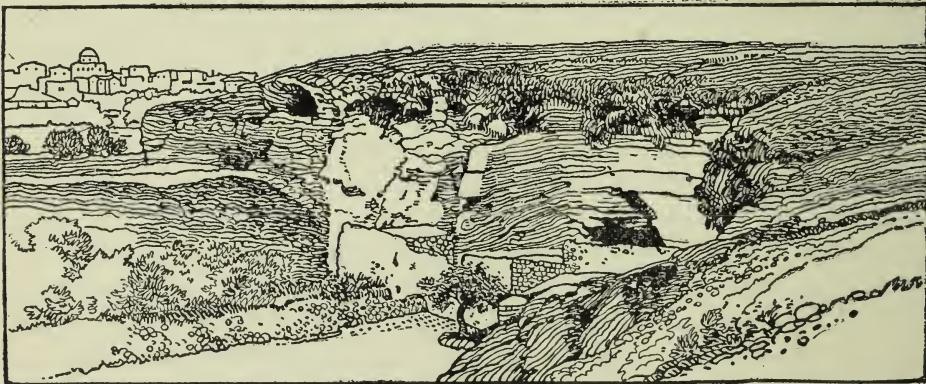
Yet it is plain that a season of spiritual communion was given to Him toward the end, and that He had even on His cross one

of those experiences, as in the desert and upon the mountain top, in which it was given Him to see clearly that which the Father wished Him to know. The fragment from the 22d Psalm in which He expressed the sense of being forsaken by God was a part of a train of thought which began in the mood of desertion, but did not end there. After some moments He cried loudly, as if, though now doubtless blind to the faces around Him, He would testify the worker's faith in His achievement: "It is finished!" and again, at the last moment, ending life with a shout, He said, "Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit," a word that suggests His confidence that the most sacred trust which God gives, that of the spiritual life, had been guarded, to the last. It breathed also His faith in the Father's will and power, and His certainty of awakening to the immortal life.

THE DEATH OF JESUS.

Within a few hours the broken body refused to obey its Master's bidding, a rupture of the heart brought the sudden end, and while yet the crowd was watching the still living malefactors on either side, He was dead.

The dying of the Christ evidently brought an impression to the bystanders such as would not have been produced by that of an ordinarily passive victim. The thief, whose words can have no other interpretation than that he had at some time listened to Jesus and learned something of His message, found



JEREMIAH'S GROTTO, NEAR JERUSALEM.

From a photograph.

in his extremity a vision of who Jesus was which was not yet firmly held even by His nearest disciples. The multitude, says Luke, returned to the city, in contrition of heart. The centurion

who was in charge of the execution and who had never heard of Jesus before was convinced, says Luke, that this was a righteous man. The earliest Gospel believed that He saw in Jesus even more, a son of the gods. To Luke the nobility of His character, to Mark the valor of His courage was impressive, even to a man accustomed to wounds and to the face of death. To all, His words of trust, of faith in His mission, of confidence of immortality made His death seem like a coronation. A member of the Sanhedrin, "who," says Mark, "was looking for the Kingdom of God," asked Pilate for the body, and gave it temporary burial in one of the tombs in the hillside near the place of crucifixion.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Who helped Jesus carry His cross?

From whom did Jesus receive expressions of sympathy on the way to Calvary?

Who was crucified with Jesus?

At the raising of the body on the cross what word did Jesus utter? Why?

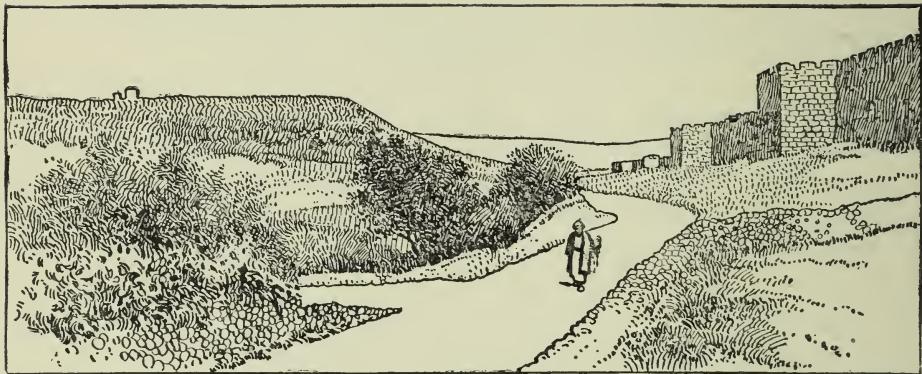
What became of the garments of Jesus? How was the distribution of them decided?

What taunt did the enemies of Jesus utter while He was suffering?

What superscription, dictated by Pilate, angered them?

Tell the dialogue between the two thieves.

What did Jesus mean by His words to the penitent thief?



From a photograph.

THE NEW CALVARY AND THE NORTHERN WALL OF JERUSALEM.

What expression of physical agony did Jesus make? Who answered it?

How did Jesus express His spiritual distress on the cross?

What later word of trust did He utter?

What were the last words of Jesus?

What was the opinion of the centurion of the character of Jesus?

What were the feelings of the crowd as they dispersed?

What was the general demeanor of Jesus in the hours of death?

What attitude of God did Jesus reveal and express upon the cross?

Did Jesus believe His death would end all?

State in definite words the meaning of Jesus' death.

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Write an imaginative report, made by Pontius Pilate to the Emperor Tiberias at Capri, concerning the trial and the death of Jesus.

Give in your own words what you think must have been the moral experience of the penitent thief.

Write thoughtfully, in not more than fifty words, what the death of Jesus teaches us concerning the love of God.

Had you been living in the time of Jesus, with the knowledge you have to-day, and had witnessed the crucifixion, what resolution would you have stated to yourself as you departed with the multitude from the cross? Put this in one written sentence.

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE CHRIST WHO ABIDES.

The earliest record of the resurrection extant: 1 Cor. 15:1-8.

The fragment left of the first Gospel record: Mark 16:1-8.

Jesus' view of immortality: Mark 12:24-27; John 14:1-3; Luke 23:43, 46.

Early experiences of the abiding presence of the Master: Acts 2:1-4; 7:55, 56; 9:1-7; 2 Cor. 12:1-10.

“Then Jesus came up, and spoke to them thus: ‘Remember, I shall myself be always with you until the close of the age.’”

Matthew 28:18, 20 (Twentieth century version)

“O Master, let me walk with thee
In lowly paths of service free;
Tell me thy secret, help me bear
The strain of toil, the fret of care.

“Teach me thy patience; still with thee
In closer, dearer company,
In work that keeps faith sweet and strong,
In trust that triumphs over wrong.

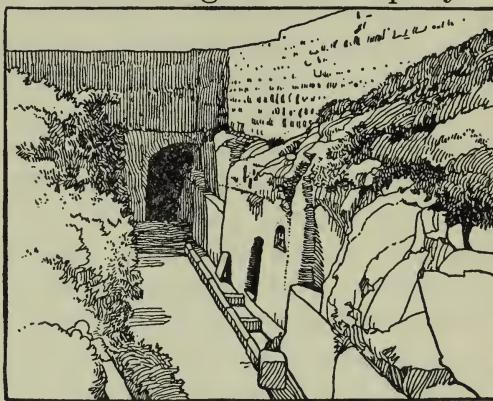
“In hope that sends a shining ray
Far down the future's broadening way,
In peace that only thou canst give,
With thee, O Master, let me live.”

—Washington Gladden.

FAITH IN THE LIVING CHRIST CREATED THE CHURCH.

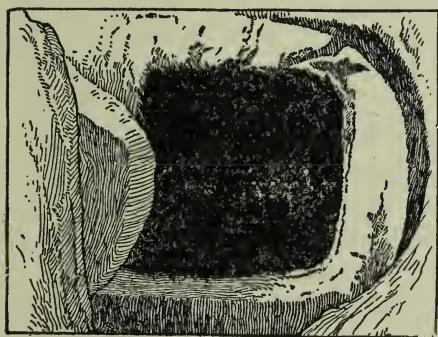
That there should grow out of the disorganized company of the believers in Jesus after His death such a splendid force as the united and active movement of early Christianity, demands as its explanation some tremendous cause. The only cause discoverable that is adequate is the assured conviction that Jesus was still living. We find in the New Testament that the central thought in the preaching of the Apostles was the resurrection of Jesus.

So certain was the entire body of Christian believers of the continued and helpful existence of the Master, that it was many years before it was deemed necessary to commit the grounds of their conviction to writing. What need was there of written proofs, when men and women were manifestly living a spiritual life, whose only source and explanation was what Paul called, "Christ living in them"? The personal influence of Jesus was binding together a beautiful fellowship of men and women, was sending them forth to evangelize the world, and was sustaining them in privations, persecutions and martyrdom.



THE "GARDEN TOMB."

The entrance to the tomb is by the small doorway in the centre of the picture.



From a photograph.

TOMB WITH ROLLING STONE.



From a photograph.

ENTRANCE TO THE SO-CALLED NEW TOMB.

THE EARLIEST ACCOUNTS OF THE RESURRECTION.

The first written record of the immortal life of Jesus is not in the Gospels, but in an epistle. In Paul's first epistle to the

Corinthians, written about fifteen years before the Gospel of Mark, he gave a careful list of the persons by whom Jesus was seen after His death. Among these he enumerated himself. This account is repeated in similar language in the Book of Acts. The substance of it is that Paul, an educated Pharisee, who had become convinced that it was his duty to endeavor to stamp out the little group of disciples who believed in whom he considered a false Messiah, was persuaded by a marvelous experience that Jesus was still living and was the spiritual Messiah whom God had sent to the world. Following this experience, Paul went forth into retirement and sat at the feet of his new spiritual Master, from whom he learned of a new race of men who had been freed from the law because the love of Christ ruled in their hearts. He felt himself commissioned by his Master as the organizer of a new empire, to supplement and supplant the Roman Empire, as the Kingdom of the spiritual in Christ. Paul's witness to the world then, and all through his later life, was that he had a personal acquaintance with the living Jesus, and he insisted that his knowledge of the Master was of equal value with any acquaintance or appearance of Him to any others. The experience of Paul seems to have been of a similar character to that of the dying Stephen, mentioned in the Book of Acts.

The earliest Gospel account of the resurrection was written not less than thirty years after the death of Jesus. This account, as we have it in Mark, is unfortunately a mere fragment. The first eight verses of the last chapter are all that are found in the earliest manuscripts, and the conclusion is evidently borrowed from the other Gospels. This fragment contains no account of the actual resurrection. It states that three women came to the neighborhood of the burial-place of Jesus, on the day following the Sabbath after His death, to embalm His body. As they drew near, wondering how they could roll away the stone door from the tomb, they looked up and saw a youth sitting beside the tomb, who said, "This is not where he is." The account adds that the youth reminded them of a statement which the Gospel had previously made,—that Jesus had said He would rise again and would go before His disciples into Galilee. The women ran away from the tomb and were so afraid that they said nothing to any one about what they had seen. Thus the fragment ends. Some have thought that as the last page of a book is always easily lost, this fact explains

its disappearance. We cannot, of course, reconstruct the story. We may say this much,—that the earliest Gospel suggests that in Galilee were the first experiences of seeing the risen Jesus. In Paul's account in the first epistle to the Corinthians he named an appearance to Peter alone. This may be the appearance which is recorded in the last chapter of the Gospel according to John as occurring in Galilee. The result of that appearance to Peter was that he became aware that Jesus was alive and had forgiven him for his denial of Him.

Paul also mentions an appearance to "above five hundred brethren at once," which is not mentioned elsewhere, unless the Pentecostal experience of the multitude of disciples, related in the Book of Acts, be the one referred to. The narratives in Matthew, Luke and John, are evidently built upon knowledge of the account by Mark, but with different inferences.

EXPERIENCES OF THE LIVING CHRIST.

We gather from these accounts that the conviction arose early among the friends of Jesus, that there had been spiritual experiences among the Twelve upon their return to Galilee, which persuaded them that Jesus was still living. These experiences were shared by Paul and Stephen, and were early reflected in the company of disciples who soon made their headquarters at Jerusalem.

While it is impossible for us to be certain as to the details of these experiences, since the written accounts appeared so many years after the death of Jesus, all Christians are united in certain great assurances. These assurances are all stated in those wonderful words found in the last chapters of the Gospel according to John.

The first of these assurances was that the power of Jesus was greater after than before His death. John reports Jesus as having said, "He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father."

The second assurance was that the disciples could, as Jesus had prophesied, understand Him better now than before His death. Jesus had said, "The Comforter, even the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things and bring to your remembrance the things that I said unto you." "He will guide you into all truth; he shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine and shall declare it unto you."

A third assurance was that the death of Jesus had turned out to be of real benefit to the church. John reports Jesus as having said, "Ye now have sorrow, but I will see you again, and your hearts shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh away from you."

We have, therefore, as the marvel of history, these three facts,—that after Jesus' apparently complete downfall, His friends received from Him greater power, deeper knowledge and stronger joy than even during His lifetime. In this power, knowledge and joy they completed their organization; went forth to tell the story of His life and immortality, and began to establish His spiritual Kingdom among the races of men.

These are the great spiritual facts which we call the resurrection, facts which Christians verify in their own fellowship with Christ to-day. In some of the details of the later Gospel accounts we recognize the answers which the early church was endeavoring to give to unbelievers in the resurrection who lived from thirty to fifty years after the crucifixion of Jesus. Those answers and explanations are only incidental. The spiritual power which Jesus has exercised since Calvary is that which constitutes the Christ who abides.

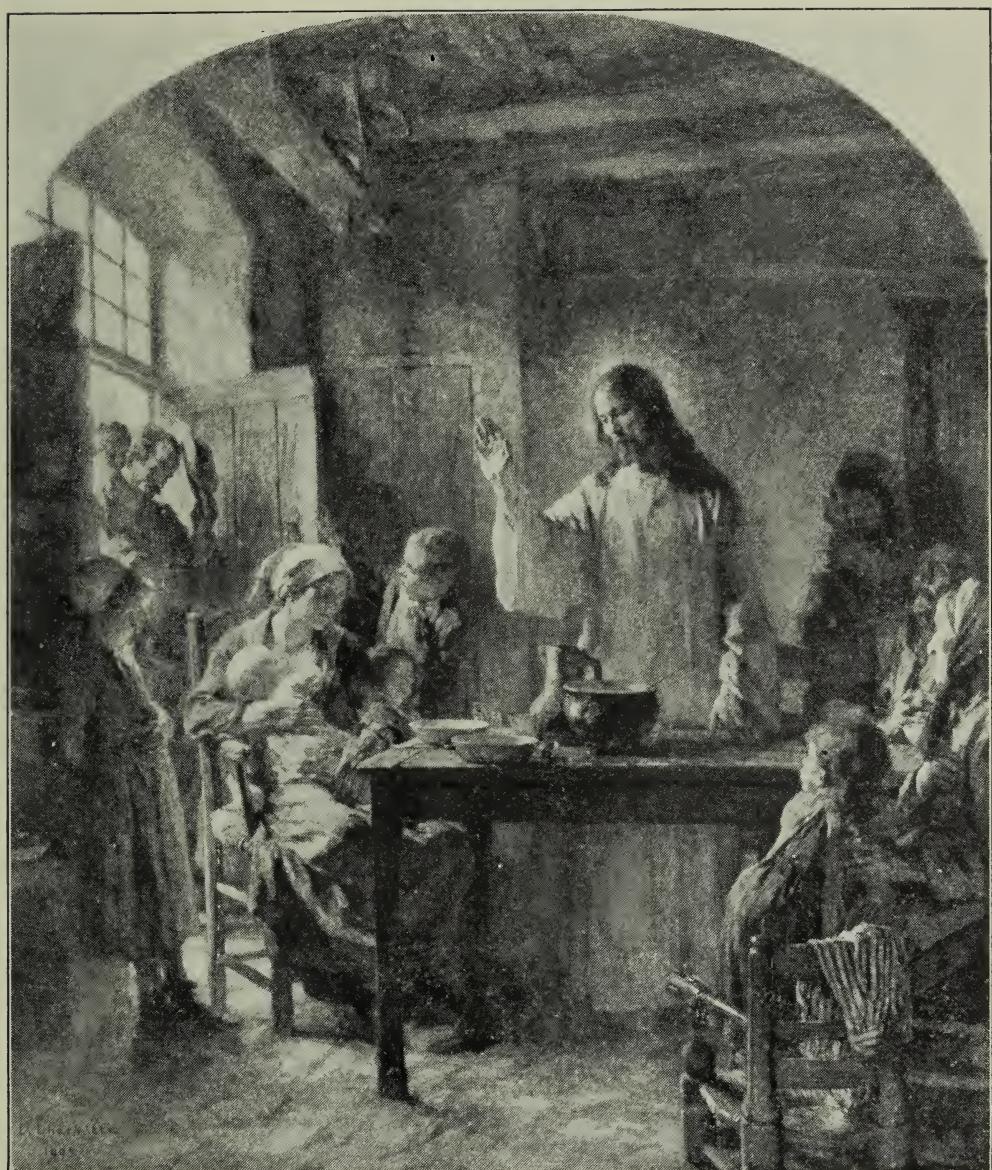
THE CHRIST WHO ABIDES.

While we may leave to scholars the problems which surround a detailed study of the New Testament accounts of the resurrection, we must ourselves feel indebted to that heroic church, out of whose mind came the Gospels, for that spectacle of true Christlikeness, which is the only convincing proof for all time of the central belief of all Christians. These Christian men and women proved by their faith and lives that the connecting bond between Jesus and us is not broken. He lived in them: in Paul, in Peter and in the multitude of unnamed Christian disciples. The essential thing is not how nor when He appeared. Jesus so lived that He made His friends absolutely sure of His immortality and theirs. A living Jesus, not in Sheol nor in Galilee, but with the Father and with us, is the dynamic of Christians. He is such to-day. This is the Christ who abides.

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

What belief only is adequate to explain the rise and growth of the Christian church?



Property of the Metropolitan Museum of Art.

AMONG THE LOWLY.
From a painting by L'hermitte.

Why did the friends of Jesus not endeavor at once to prove His resurrection?

Name the manifestations of the living Jesus, enumerated by Paul.

What evidence did Paul himself accept as to Jesus' resurrection?

What does the fragment of the resurrection story in Mark tell us?

State briefly Jesus' view of immortality, as recorded in the Scripture references.

What do we believe about the risen life of Jesus?

State briefly the meaning of the Scripture references concerning "The Christ who abides."

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

Give in brief some of the experiences of the abiding presence of the Master, from the Scripture references above.

What is the essential thing in a faith in the living Christ?

How does belief in a living Jesus help you in your everyday life?

WORK FOR ALL.

Turn to the "Work for All" at the close of the next chapter and begin it now, so that it may be completed during the next fortnight, as a monumental result of this course of study.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

THE RADIANCE OF THE MASTER.

Early accounts of the influence of Jesus: Mark 16:20; Acts 2:37-47; 10:44-48; 13:46-52; 16:4-10; 18:1-11.

A prophetic anticipation of the triumph of His kingdom: Revelation 21:1-7, 10-27; 22:1-5.

The right relation to Jesus: Mark 1:17; Matt. 11:28-30; Revelation 19:10-14.

"And the armies which are in heaven followed him: Revelation 19:14.

"Lo, we that dare the all-holy fight,
Our soldier oath we pledge to-day.
Our soldier hands 'neath thine we lay,
Dread captain of the hosts of Light.

"This soul of youth that springs to prove
Heaven's knighthood on heaven's olden foe,
O God in man, 'tis thine to know,
'Tis thine, O man in God, to love.

"In Love's fair name to battle sore,
Lord of the brave, lead on thine own,
The viewless banner o'er us blown,
A host of Christ forevermore."

—John H. Skrine.

This last chapter is a brief study of the way the living Jesus has cast, not His shadow, but His radiance into human life.

JESUS IN HIS CHURCH.

The Christian church is the first evidence, as we have seen, for the living and abiding Christ. The church poured itself

like a pure mountain stream into the foul river of the Augustan age and purified the waters wherever it flowed. It sanctified the relations of the home, it ennobled marriage and the position of woman, it showed new possibilities in human friendship, and its little circles of Christian fellowship became such unselfish and mutually helpful communities as the world had not known. While the early Christians believed that the end of the world was near, and so did not attempt to change society, nevertheless their social influence was revolutionary. Slavery and the abuses due to injustice grew less, there was an increased consideration and care for children, the sick, the poor and the aged, institutions of philanthropy began to rise and the democracy in the church was soon reflected in the state. In all the life of the early church these marks of progress owed their existence to personal devotion to Jesus. His rewarding face met the eyes of the dying Christian martyr, His character was the exemplar in personal relations and to some extent His ideals for the Kingdom on earth began to be definitely sought as the goal for Christian endeavor.

JESUS IN LITERATURE.

The influence of Jesus was soon felt in literature. We have been making a study of the Gospels, and have been impressed with the sincerity and the earnestness of the authors. Nothing but a passion for Jesus could have produced writings that are so limpid, so convincing, so ennobling. It has been often remarked that it would take a Jesus to invent such a Jesus as they portray. Surely it must have been men who were very near to Jesus who could give portrayals so impersonal and modest and yet so clear and compelling as these. The imaginative in literature began at an early period to glorify Jesus. One form of imaginative literature is that of song. In addition to the sacred songs which were composed around the birth of Jesus, the church from the first century began to utter hymns and rhythmic prayers in which the praise of Jesus was foremost. Those songs and prayers, amid the divisions of the sects, remain the best bond of spiritual unity, since "Christendom is still united in the chambers where good men pray."

Time fails to tell how the influence of Jesus actually purified and enlarged the moral possibilities of the Greek language, in which His Gospels and the earliest statements of Christian faith were written. Nor may we pause to speak of the influence of

Jesus in myth, drama, poetry, lyric and epic, fiction and general literature. So deeply is His life and teaching interwoven with all writing that it may be said that no man is truly educated who does not have, as a part of his intellectual furnishing, at least some elementary knowledge of what Jesus did and said.

JESUS AND HUMAN THOUGHT.

Jesus has had a great influence upon thought. One of the first endeavors of men was to explain Jesus. The synoptic Gospels are evidence of somewhat unformed theories about Him, but in the Fourth Gospel a writer has applied a current philosophy to Him, and has found Him to be the Logos made flesh of the Philonian thought. Paul had evidently worked out a mingling of Greek with his own Jewish thought in his epistles. Many creeds have been framed since then, but in all of them the effort has been made to make Jesus central. The creeds have often been shackles to man's mind, but the influence of Jesus has been to free men's thinking. He who encouraged men to know the truth, because it would make them free, engaged in such a candid scrutiny of the only books and facts and ideas at His command as to encourage every thinker in the various realms of science ever since. A youth to-day may study with complete candor whatever God has made, knowing that Jesus is with him in his search to discover all that is to be known.

Jesus was never more alive in the thought of the world than now. Each age has to write its own life of Jesus, as His manifold character comes up for fresh study, and each generation tries to interpret it according to its own genius. The present study is only one of these modern endeavors to make Jesus intelligible. It should be regarded as the introduction and not the conclusion to life-long investigation of this noblest subject.

JESUS IN ART.

Jesus influenced the greatest human arts. There is scarcely any painting up to the Renaissance that does not represent either Jesus or His mother. The church, which took possession of old Greek and Roman basilicas and temples, finally created in Gothic cathedrals a form of art made solely for the purposes of Christian worship. Not only the sweetest hymns but the grandest oratorios have been composed in the adoration of Jesus.

Endeavors to portray the face and figure of Jesus have never

been satisfying, since the character that shone behind them was transcendent. But with the awakening of the human spirit at the end of the Middle Ages there came among men a freshened conception of Jesus' faith in the essential beauty of life and of humanity. Then the artists, who had been nurtured in the church, began to look upon human faces and forms as models for their pictured angels, and soon after frankly acknowledged that men and nature were worth painting in themselves regardless of their possible uses in church decoration. So the world came to have the human madonnas of Raphael and Fra Angelico, the smiling children and cherubs of the Della Robbias, the wonderful drawings and sculptures of the human figure of Angelo, the incisive character sketches of Durer and Holbein, the mysterious lights and shades of Rembrandt, the transcriptions to canvas of the wonder and charm of nature of Turner and Corot and Constable, and the painted parables of Holman Hunt and Watts. These were all Christian artists, and their inspiration may be traced directly from Jesus' attitude toward men and life.

Somewhat the same things may be said of the conscientious pains of the handcraftsmen, the endeavors to add to the comfort and beauty of human homes, of the architects and decorators, the rise of home music and balladry, and all humble arts and crafts that have brought the Kingdom of God into the beautiful ordering of personal and domestic life.

There have been ages when the prostitution of art caused a strong puritan influence to rise in protest, which confused beauty with its misuse and abolished both together. A saner Christianity regards such protests as having been necessary and noble, but believes that He who loved the flowers and the birds and song and the faces of men desires that these shall always minister to goodness. Perhaps Jesus' distinguishing mental trait was that He succeeded in finding pleasure in more things than did any one else. He saw the inner beauty in neglected objects and He drew a serene strength from unlovely places and persons, and He set the world the example of a life which honored God in the fine art of beautiful living.

JESUS IN THE LIVES OF MEN.

Jesus' most wonderful influence has been in the personal lives of men. Doubtless He is the human ideal realized. Men can conceive no higher type of purpose and conduct than to be like

Him. He is one of the few sons of earth for whom men have been willing to die, and men have died for Jesus for reasons more unselfish and noble than for any other hero.

Let us not deny that crimes and wrongs have been done in the name of Jesus, that His church has at times so misrepresented Him by its motives and conduct as to bring shame upon Him. It remains true that, in every age, there has been a type of character so distinguished and so unique that it has been rightly recognized as Christian. That type of character has often been seen in men of so great ability or sanctity that it has been remarked that Jesus may be measured by the greatness of the men who have owned Him as Master. To make a list of such men would be to recapitulate most of the world's history since His day. But we may at least mention these: Paul, Augustine, Chrysostom, Francis of Assisi, Arnold of Brescia, Savonarola, Wyclif, Luther, Calvin, Knox, Livingstone, Gladstone, Shaftesbury, Howard, Havelock, Gordon, Joan of Arc, Penn, Washington, Lincoln, Drummond and Brooks. These men, in their various places and according to their types of genius, acknowledged Jesus as their Master and endeavored to make the work of their lives a part of the upbuilding of His Kingdom.

Still more impressive has been the influence of Jesus among average men. Take the impression made by a foreign missionary. We may illustrate by India. "India," says Dr. J. D. Jones of that country which gives more thought to religion than any other, "India has plenty of religious thought, but has never had a religious idea incarnated in any life." The truth of this may be seen in the fact that the most popular gods in India are, one the god of lust, a second the god of deviltry, and the third the god of cruelty. Into this country comes a missionary. He has a good education, a conservative theology and a genuine consecration to Jesus. The shrewd and acute Hindus can controvert all his arguments, they see no value in his theology, but they cannot resist the evidence of his life. Think what a pure, refined and noble Bible reader means when she appears in a dirty and degraded Indian village. Imagine the impression made by a skilled Christian physician who lays his life alongside the diseased, the plague-smitten, the suffering people of an Indian province. Through such men and women's lives and deeds the gospel is sure to triumph, and such expressions of Jesus must transform the world.

For we need not look in foreign lands for testimonies as to the power of Jesus in the individual life. Every age collects its witness from men and women who, depraved in life, despondent of heart and impotent in will, have found a vital connection with God through Jesus, and have been lifted by Him "out of the miry clay, their feet set upon a rock, and a new song put in their mouths, even praise to our God." An age that accepts no other miracles stops its mouth when it beholds what the Father of Jesus does with a yielded life. He who made His great Son the Messenger and Channel of His word to men has also made sons to Himself out of the scum and waste of humanity.

JESUS AND THE KINGDOM.

Since Christian men have seen that the Kingdom is to come by a campaign and not by a catastrophe, the influence of Jesus has manifested itself in marvelous ways in establishing that Kingdom on earth. The motive and program of the foreign missionary crusade is the largest philanthropic plan that has ever entered the mind of man, and the church has at length mapped out the whole world as the field of Christian enterprise. At home Christians are beginning to study as never before how to seize the whole of life for the Kingdom and build its glory in every phase of it. Jesus was never so alive as to-day, when men are endeavoring to realize the new Jerusalem on earth.

The influence of Jesus either created or gave a vivifying impetus to the education of the people, to hospitals and medicine, to charity and philanthropy, and above all to the devotion of men in personal service to suffering and needy humanity. It is inspiring men not only to relieve distress but to study and remove its causes. It is leading Christian men to study politics, political economy, the relations of capital and labor, finance, land tenures and the conditions under which men labor, the protection of women and children, and has stimulated countless movements to apply the remedies in practical ways. There is still in the world an almost pathetic expectation that Jesus has a new word for our own time. Workingmen have been known to curse the Christian church for its apathy to their needs and in the same breath cheer the name of the Carpenter of Nazareth. Especially do men, rich and poor, still look to the principles of Jesus to save the class of humanity out of which He Himself sprung, those who work with their hands.

WHO WAS JESUS?

Surely no one can have gone, as we have for months, in company with the life of Jesus or touched, as we have done to-day, the influence which Jesus has had in the world, without asking the question which Jesus Himself once asked of His disciples, "Who do you say that I am?" We have seen something of what was meant when He was called "the Son of man," the human brother who was a prophet of God. We have seen how Jesus enlarged and spiritualized the old Jewish idea of a "Messiah" by becoming the founder of a world-wide Kingdom of devotion to God and to men. We cannot perhaps fully understand or measure that other title, "the Son of God," by which He was called by others more often than He called Himself. Does it not at least mean to us that the God of many providences gave to the world this supreme Providence? So mighty and enriching a stream surely came from some high and heavenly source. Does it not mean at least that the Father, to whom Jesus consecrated Himself, poured the fulness of spiritual love and wisdom and power upon Him? Do we not feel that Jesus speaks to us from a character which we recognize as the character of God and with the authority of an accepted and commissioned Son?

THE DEMAND AND CHALLENGE OF JESUS.

After all, the chief influence of Jesus has been and is in commanding and challenging personal loyalty. As the will is higher than the feelings and the intellect, so Jesus' appeal to the will is greater than His appeal to the mind, and the heart. Great Christians have always been men who have devoted their choices to the ends for which Jesus cared. It has been startling in studying the lives of the noblest of His followers, to note how they so identified their life work with the purpose of Jesus that they seemed to be doing just what He would have done in their place. It remains true still that to be a Christian is chiefly, after understanding the ideals of Jesus, to stand on His side, to devote one's self loyally to His work and to try to make His will the law of one's own life and of the life of the world.

The purpose of this whole study of the life of Jesus has been to help you to understand those ideals, so that you shall take His side as long as you live.

Can one know who Jesus was and what He stands for and not be willing to follow Him?

QUESTIONS.

To sum up the scripture material and the lesson story.

Give two accounts, from the scripture references, of the influence of Jesus in the earliest days of His church.

What prophetic anticipations were recorded within a century after Jesus' death as to the triumph of His Kingdom?

In what three ways has Jesus influenced literature?

In what three ways has He influenced thought?

What three arts have helped the influence of Jesus?

Where has Jesus' influence been most wonderfully felt?

Give illustrations of Jesus' influence upon great men.

Show how the influence of the life of a consecrated missionary brings the influence of Jesus to bear upon the degraded.

Illustrate the influence of Jesus in saving sinners.

In what two great directions is the modern church extending the Kingdom?

TOPICS FOR INDIVIDUAL REPORT.

State in fifty words your opinion of Jesus.

Describe in fifty words the influence of Jesus upon you and those about you.

Put in the simplest and strongest possible sentence the demand which Jesus makes of the individual.

WORK FOR ALL.

It is proposed, as a monumental record of the study of the thirty-six chapters and a souvenir to be permanently cherished, that each pupil make his final exercise, to be undertaken and completed during the last two weeks of study, a short essay upon "My Impressions of the Life of Jesus." This essay should not only be neatly written or printed but should be lovingly wrought, illuminated and decorated with ornamental covers, pictures gathered during the course mounted and inserted, and then suitably bound. This booklet will be much cherished.

A smaller and simpler task will be the making of a wall card containing a picture and favorite quotation with which to sum up the study. The Sunday School Commission, 416 Lafayette Avenue, New York, sells a very striking large card with bold red border and artistic printing, which may serve as a model. This card, when completed, will make a beautiful gift to one's mother.

The Ideal of Jesus

By WILLIAM NEWTON CLARKE, D.D.

Professor of Theology at Colgate University

12mo, \$1.50 net

Postage 18 cents

In this book Dr. Clarke attempts to answer the question, "What is Christianity?" not by any lengthy texture of new doctrine, but by going back to the source of Christianity—Christ himself—and forgetting all the nineteen centuries that lie between. He says in his Preface: "In the twentieth century we inherit a Christianity. It comes to us from Jesus the Founder, but it comes of necessity through the long course of time, and it has become modified and is not altogether like that which came from Him at first.... So when we ask 'What is Christianity?' we must look for a living ideal to which certain men are trying to conform themselves, one another, and the world." The author undertakes to show "The Ideal" which Jesus entertained.

OTHER BOOKS BY DR. CLARKE

Sixty Years with the Bible. A Record of Experience	12mo, \$1.25 net
The Christian Doctrine of God (<i>International Theological Library</i>)	Cr. 8vo, 2.50 net
The Use of the Scriptures in Theology	12mo, \$1.00 net
A Study of Christian Missions	12mo, \$1.25
Can I Believe in God the Father?	12mo, \$1.00 net
What Shall We Think of Christianity?	12mo, \$1.00 net
An Outline of Christian Theology	Cr. 8vo, \$2.50 net

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York



3 0112 072453654

THE BIBLE STUDY UNION (BLAKESLEE) LESSONS

The Completely Graded Series

THE FULL CURRICULUM

when complete will provide special courses for pupils between the ages of four and twenty-one, and a number of elective courses for adults, as follows (courses ready being indicated by an *):

I. BEGINNERS. 2 Years. Courses to be announced.

II. PRIMARY. 3 Years. Ages 6-8.

Aim. To awaken love and trust, and cultivate habits of obedience.

First Year. *God the Loving Father and His Children. (*Now ready.*)

Second Year. *God's Loyal Children. Learning to Live Happily Together. (*Now ready.*)

Third Year. *Jesus' Way of Love and Service. (*Now ready.*)

III. JUNIOR. 4 Years. Ages 9-12.

Aim. To lead to a desire for God's control in life, by Bible study. Constructing the JUNIOR BIBLE as follows:

First Year. Part I. *Early Heroes and Heroines. (*Now ready.*)

Second Year. Part II. *Kings and Prophets. (*Now ready.*)

Third Year. Part III. *Life and Words of Jesus. (*Now ready.*)

Fourth Year. Part IV. *Christian Apostles and Missionaries. (*Now ready.*)

IV. INTERMEDIATE. 4 Years. Ages 13-16.

Aim. To bring the adolescent into vital and personal relations with Christ and the church.

First Year. *Heroes of the Faith. (*Now ready.*)

Second Year. *Christian Life and Conduct. (*Now ready.*)

Historical Geography of Bible Lands. (*Ready June, 1913.*)

Third Year. The Story of the Bible. (*Ready September, 1913.*)

Fourth Year. *The Life of Jesus. (*Now ready.*)

V. SENIOR. 4 Years. Ages 17-21.

First Year. *Preparations for Christianity. (*Now ready.*)

Second Year. *Landmarks in Christian History. (*Now ready.*)

Third Year. *The Conquering Christ. (*Now ready.*)

Fourth Year. The Modern Church. (*Ready September, 1913.*)

VI. ADDITIONAL SENIOR OR ADULT.

*Heroes and Crises of Early Hebrew History. (*Now ready.*)

*Founders and Rulers of United Israel. (*Now ready.*)

*Kings and Prophets of Israel and Judah. (*Now ready.*)

*The Makers and Teachers of Judaism. (*Now ready.*)

*The Making of a Nation. (*Now Ready.*)

Send post card for free samples of any grade in which you are interested. Our booklet, THE CORE OF GOOD TEACHING, describing the work for the whole course, will be sent free upon request.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, New York